



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

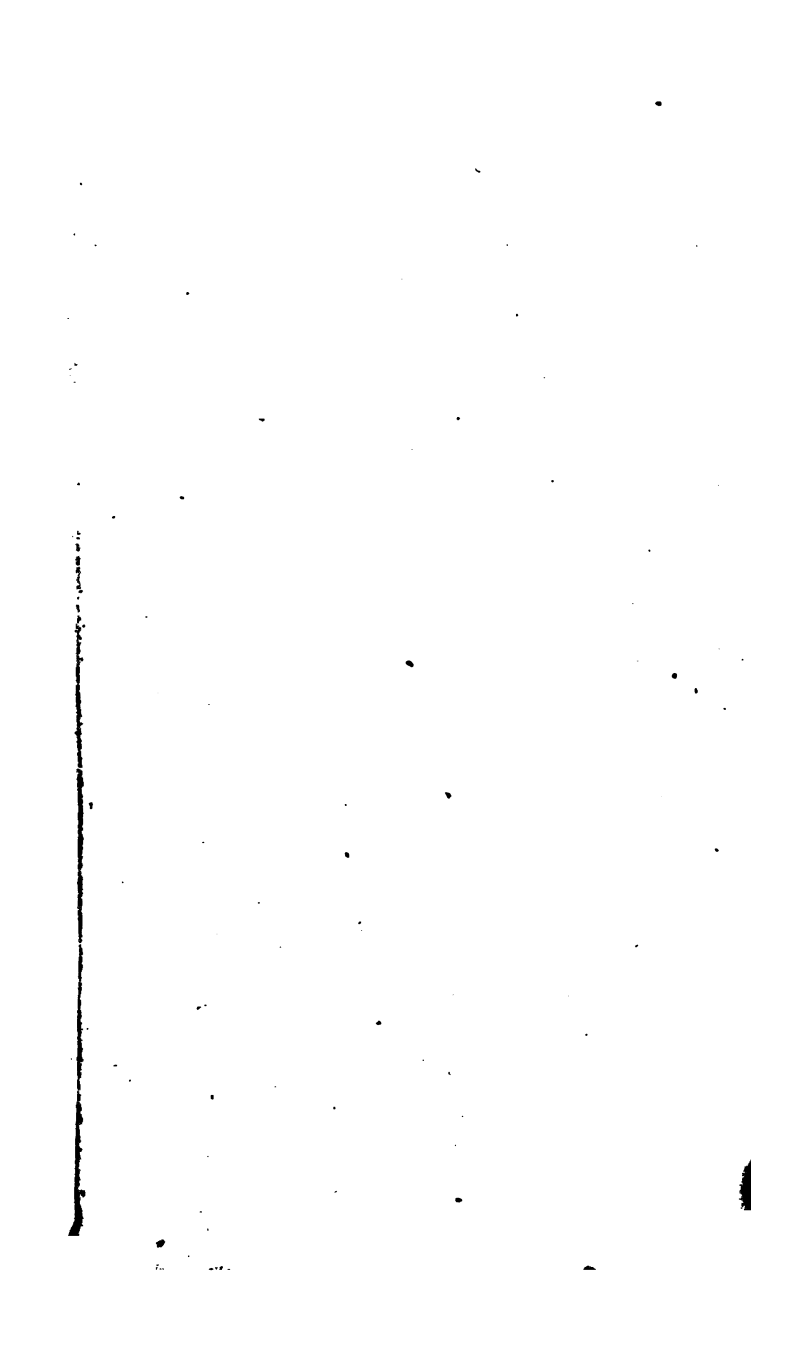
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

37.

11.











Her Most Gracious Majesty
VICTORIA THE 1st,

Printed in the Abridgement of The History of England.

HISTORY OF ENGLAND;

FROM THE ROMAN INVASION,

TO

THE ACCESSION OF

QUEEN VICTORIA I.

ADAPTED TO THE USE OF SCHOOLS,

AND PARTICULARLY SUITED TO LADIES' SEMINARIES.

WITH QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

EDITED BY

WILLIAM ANGUS, A.M.

Author of An English Pronouncing Vocabulary,—An English Grammar,—A Harmony of the Gospels, &c. &c.

GLASGOW:

PRINTED BY W. G. BLACKIE & Co.,

AND SOLD BY FRANCIS ORR, & SONS, GLASGOW;

W. & S. ORR, & CO., LONDON;

AND JOHN SUTHERLAND, EDINBURGH.

MDCCCXXXVII.

Entered in Stationers' Hall.



P R E F A C E.

AN objection has often been made by many Teachers, who wish to introduce a course of Historical Reading into their Schools, to most of the Histories at present in use, as being too large for Classes in Public Schools, where the attention of the Pupil is generally directed to a variety of subjects.

Another, and a more serious objection is, that they frequently contain narrations which it is unnecessary, or rather improper, to present to the minds of youth. In compiling the following *History of England*, care has been taken, either to exclude such passages, or to express them in a manner less objectionable. It has also been attempted to introduce, in a limited space, as much as possible of what is important or interesting in connection with British History.

HAVING been entrusted by the Author to take charge of the following work while going through the press, I have much pleasure in recommending it to the notice of my professional brethren; and have no doubt, but, on trial, they will find it well suited to the purpose intended.

I suggested to the Author, the propriety of annexing some Questions, the better to adapt it to the prevailing mode of tuition. These can be used, omitted, or enlarged, at the pleasure of the Teacher.

WILLIAM ANGUS, A M.

GLASGOW, *December*, 1837.]

HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

INTRODUCTION.

Invasion by the Romans—Britain under the Roman dominion—Saxons invited to assist the Britons against the Picts and Scots—They take possession of the country—expel the Britons—and establish the government known by the name of the Saxon Heptarchy—Danish invasion—Saxon and Danish kings.

LITTLE is known of Britain till about 55 years before Christ, when it was invaded by Julius Cesar. Its inhabitants were then a warlike, but barbarous people. The country was divided into small independent states, and the religion of the Druids, who had great authority over them, was superstitious and cruel in the highest degree. The remains of stupendous structures, supposed to have been erected for the observance of their religious rites, are still to be seen: the principal of these is Stonehenge, on Salisbury plain.

2. The Britons at first resisted, but were soon obliged to yield to the Roman arms, and agree to terms, which, however, they did not observe, till compelled to do so by Cesar's return the following year. From this time the country gradually advanced in civilisation; and for nearly a century was not molested by the Romans.

3. In the reign of Claudius an army sent by that emperor was vigorously opposed by the Britons under Caractacus; but, after struggling for nine years, their leader

was betrayed, and taken captive to Rome, where his dignified behaviour so affected the emperor, that he liberated him, and treated him with kindness. This happened A.D. 51.

4. The Roman army remained in Britain, and governors were appointed to the different stations. The Druids were murdered, or driven from the country, by the Romans, who hated their religion. The island of Anglesea, their chief seat, was ravaged, and many of the priests burned on the altars which they had prepared for their victims. The shameful treatment experienced by the celebrated queen Boadicea, from the Roman governor, roused the Britons to rebel. They were at first successful; and, in their fury, cruelly massacred about 70,000 Romans and strangers; but were afterwards defeated in a decisive battle, in which 80,000 Britons were slain.

5. The Roman dominion, however, was not fully established till Agricola was sent by Vespasian. The natives who then resisted, were driven to the mountains of *Caledonia*, now Scotland, and walls and garrisons were erected between the friths of Forth and Clyde, to protect the conquered part of the country. Small remnants of these walls are still to be seen. Tranquillity was in a great measure maintained from this period till the decline of the Roman Empire; and about the year 430 their forces were finally withdrawn.

6. The country being left defenceless by the departure of the Romans, the Picts and Scots, who inhabited the mountainous regions, forced a passage into the Southern part of the kingdom, ravaging it as they went. The Britons, whose valour had greatly decreased under the Romans, were unable to defend themselves; and assistance being refused by the Romans, they applied to the Saxons, a German tribe, a brave but fierce people, with whom war was a trade. These readily joined the British forces, and speedily routed the Picts and Scots, who had advanced as far as Lincolnshire.

7. The Saxons now resolved to establish themselves

in the country they had been invited to protect, and accomplished their object by treachery. Their success encouraged other tribes, under the general name of Saxons, to come over; and they gradually expelled the natives, and took possession of the kingdom under seven principalities, known by the name of the Saxon Heptarchy.

8. It was during this government, towards the end of the sixth century, that the Christian religion was promulgated in England. It was first preached in Kent by Augustine, a pious monk, sent for that purpose by Pope Gregory; and by the year 827, when the seven kingdoms were united under Egbert, Christianity was generally professed, and had produced a striking improvement on the manners of the people.

9. Tranquillity had not been long enjoyed under Egbert, when the Danes, who had for many years committed petty depredations on the English coast, now in formidable numbers invaded the country. They plundered and carried off the inhabitants; and continued, during the reign of Egbert and his successors, Ethelwolf, Ethelwald, Ethelbert and Ethelred, cruelly to harass the kingdom. In 871 the great

ALFRED

succeeded his brother Ethelred, and bravely repulsed the Danes in several battles; but was unable to continue resistance to an enemy who every year arrived in great numbers.

10. Alfred having vainly endeavoured to encourage his subjects, who left the country in dismay, was obliged to conceal himself, disguised as a peasant, in the house of a herdsman, whose wife, ignorant of the rank of her guest, ordered him one day to watch the toasting of some cakes, and reprimanded him severely for allowing them to be burned. Having no one to give him intelligence of the enemy, he himself ventured into the Danish camp, in the disguise of a minstrel, and obtained such a knowledge of their situation as enabled him to attack them with advantage. He made a wise use of the victory he obtained,

and of the peace which ensued; using every means for the encouragement of learning and the restraining of vice. He accomplished the translation of the Psalms and the New Testament into the Saxon language. He died in the year 900; but the reformation which his wise measures had effected in the short space of twelve years seems almost incredible, and well entitled him to the appellation of GREAT. Alfred was succeeded by his son

EDWARD,

11. Whose warlike abilities found employment in checking the incursions of the Danes: he died in 925, and was succeeded by his son

ETHELSTAN,

the beginning of whose reign was also disturbed by frequent wars with the Danes; but he gained a complete victory in a general battle, and was not again molested by them. He completed the translation of the Scriptures, and encouraged commerce, by enacting, that a merchant who had made three voyages on his own account should be entitled to the rank of THANE. His brother

EDMOND

ascended the throne in 941, and was slain by a robber, in the sixth year of his reign. He was succeeded by his brother

EDRED,

12. In whose reign the marriage of the clergy was prohibited by Dunstan, a monk, who had acquired great influence in the kingdom, and to whose directions even the king implicitly submitted. *Edred* died in 955, and was succeeded by his nephew

EDWY,

eldest son of Edmond, an accomplished and amiable prince; but he was greatly troubled by the monks, particularly by Dunstan, and Odo, archbishop of Canterbury. One instance of their audacity and cruelty was seizing his queen Elgiva, branding her face with hot irons, and sending her to Ireland; and on her attempting to return,

she was put to death at Gloucester, in the most barbarous manner. Not satisfied with this, they stirred up a rebellion, and obliged him to give up part of the kingdom to *Edgar*, his younger brother. His death soon after put Edgar in possession of the whole.

EDGAR

13. Was not deficient in capacity for governing, but submitted entirely to the monks. He encouraged strangers to settle in England for the benefit of trade; and succeeded in clearing the country of wolves, with which it had been much infested, by exacting from the kings of Wales, as yearly tribute, the heads of three hundred wolves. He died after a peaceable reign of sixteen years, and was succeeded by his son

EDWARD THE MARTYR,

an amiable but weak prince. He was stabbed, in the fourth year of his reign, by order of his step-mother, *Elfrida*, while drinking a cup of liquor, with which she had presented him.

ETHELRED,

14. The son of *Elfrida*, a prince of feeble character, ascended the throne in 979. He thought to purchase the forbearance of the Danes, who began to make inroads on his kingdom, by giving them sums of money. This of course induced them to return. To get rid of them, and of those settled in the kingdom, who were much disliked by the Saxons, he formed the horrid design of murdering all the Danes in the kingdom, which was effected in November, 1002, in one day. This perfidious action roused the vengeance of *Sweyn*, king of Denmark, whose sister *Gunilda* had not escaped in the massacre: he ravaged the country during ten years, destroying cities and churches. *Ethelred* was supported by his son *Edmond*, a prince of great valour, but was at last obliged to fly to Normandy, where his queen and two younger sons had been kindly received by her brother, *Richard*, duke of Normandy. The king of Denmark died soon after

he had subdued England, and his son Canute made a treaty with Edmond, by which the kingdom was divided between them; but Edmond being murdered at Oxford soon after this,

CANUTE

15. Took possession of the whole in 1017. He governed with wisdom, and to the satisfaction of his English and Danish subjects. To reprove the adulation of his courtiers, who wished to flatter him that his power was absolute, he one day ordered his chair to be placed on the shore, while the tide was advancing, and having sat down, commanded it to retire, and not presume to wet his feet: he remained, as if in expectation of being obeyed, till it had reached him; then, turning to his courtiers, he bade them fear Him who alone could say to the ocean, Thus far shalt thou come, and no farther. He died in the nineteenth year of his reign, and his son

HAROLD

succeeded to the crown of England. He reigned four years, and was succeeded, in 1039, by

HARDICANUTE,

16. Youngest son of Canute, by Emma, widow of Ethelred, who lived only two years after his accession; but in that short time he had lost the affections of the English by his violence, and rigorous exactions. The nation, tired of Danish kings, gladly invited

EDWARD THE CONFESSOR,

Son of Ethelred, in 1041, to ascend the throne. The power of Godwin, earl of Kent, had encreased much during the two preceding reigns, and was now so great as to annoy his sovereign. To secure his influence, Edward married his daughter, but had no children. Harold, earl Godwin's son, aspired openly to the throne; and, by his prudence and generosity, acquired so much popularity, that on the death of Edward, in 1066, he took possession *of the crown without opposition.*

HAROLD

17. Began his government with wisdom and impartiality. He repelled an invasion of the Norwegians; but had no sooner accomplished this, than his title to the crown was disputed by *William*, duke of Normandy, who landed in the south of England, with an army of 60,000, in the end of September. He was met by Harold, at the head of a powerful force, and, on the 14th October, the battle of Hastings was fought. After great slaughter on both sides, the fate of the battle was decided by Harold being slain by an arrow; on which the English troops gave way, and William became, as he was afterwards called, CONQUERER.

WHEN did Cesar invade Britain? What was then the character of the Britons? What was the government and religion of the country? Do any of the druidical temples still exist? Where? 2. Did the Britons at once yield to the Romans? When did Cesar return, and for what purpose? What took place for a century after this period? 3. Who opposed the army sent by Claudius? What happened to Caractacus when taken captive to Rome? 4. Did the Roman army remain in Britain? What was done in Anglesea? What made the Britons rebel? 5. Who established more fully the Roman dominion? What was done to protect the country? When did the Romans leave Britain? 6. What happened on their departure? To whom did the Britons apply for assistance? 7. What was the behaviour of the Saxons? What change took place in the kingdom? 8. Where and by whom was the Christian religion first preached in England? When and under whom was the Heptarchy united? 9. Who invaded England in the reign of Egbert? 10. Who repulsed the Danes? What did Alfred effect during his reign? 11. Who succeeded Alfred? In what did he find employment? Who succeeded him? How did he encourage commerce? Who succeeded him? What was the manner of his death? 12. Who succeeded Edmond? Who had great influence during this reign? By whom was Edred succeeded? Who troubled him? What else did they do? 13. What did Edgar do to benefit trade? Who succeeded him? What occasioned his death? 14. What did Ethelred do to get rid of the Danes? Whose vengeance was roused by this horrid action? What was the treaty between Canute and Edmond? 15. How did Canute govern? In what way did he reprove the adulation of his courtiers? Who succeeded him? 16. Who was Hardicanute his successor? How did he lose the affections of his subjects? When was Edward the Confessor invited to ascend the throne? Who aspired to the throne and took possession of it on Edward's death? Who disputed his title to the crown? In what battle was Harold slain?

HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

FROM THE NORMAN CONQUEST.

1. The death of Harold, and the defeat of his army, filled the English with consternation; and despairing of their ability to resist the victors, they resolved on yielding to the authority of

1066.]

WILLIAM,

[1086.

whose accession to the throne was sanctioned by the Pope, and consequently supported by the clergy, many of whom were Normans. William lost no time in improving the victory he had gained: he began by publicly returning thanks to God for his success, and then approached the capital with his troops in the most orderly manner. On his arrival, the chief nobility, with Edgar Atheling, the lawful heir to the crown, came and requested him to take possession of the vacant throne; and he was accordingly crowned in Westminster Abbey, on the 26th December, 1066.

2. He began his administration by introducing many improvements in the laws; and by the impartial execution of justice, and strict discipline of his army, he greatly improved the comfort of the people, and thus prevented the jealousy which a vanquished people might have been disposed to feel towards their conquerors.

3. William, sensible that his conquest of the country *had been greatly facilitated* by the want of fortified places,

immediately set about supplying the deficiency, by building castles and fortifications in the places best situated for commanding the kingdom. The nobility imitated the example; and the buildings they erected were such as to serve for places of defence, as well as residence; which was the more necessary, as many of them were surrounded by those who had been deprived of the possessions they enjoyed, and would of course be inclined to retaliate. To prevent the people from meeting at night, to form conspiracies, William made a law, that all fires and lights should be extinguished at eight o'clock; and this was the origin of the curfew bell,* which was sounded at that hour.

4. The country being tranquil, William went to visit his former friends and subjects in Normandy, taking care to have along with him the most powerful of his English subjects, and leaving Normans to protect his interests in the country. These took advantage of his absence to insult and tyrannise over the people, which so exasperated them, that they conspired to procure a general massacre of the Normans, similar to what had formerly been effected on the Danes. William hastened over, and soon disconcerted their bloody schemes; but he ever after regarded the English as his enemies, and treated them with great rigour, which they took every opportunity to resent. They were excluded from all situations of influence or authority; and, with the view of retaining the power he thus acquired, he introduced the feudal law, dividing the land into baronies, the value being entered in a book called *Domesday-book*, still preserved in the tower of London, which was built during that reign.

5. William was successful in quelling all the insurrections which were raised against his authority, both by his English and Norman subjects; but his latter years were embittered by dissensions in his own family, and by the death of his queen Matilda. His death was occasioned by bruises he received from the starting of his horse while

* *Couvre-feu*, Norman French; i. e. Cover the fire.

leading an army against the king of France, who had irritated him by encouraging the rebellion of his subjects. He died on the 9th Sept., 1087, at a small village near Rouen, having bequeathed the crown of England to William, his second son.

1036.]

WILLIAM RUFUS

[1100.

6. Hastened to England, and took possession of the royal treasure, and the most important fortresses, before the accounts of his father's death had come, and thus succeeded in getting himself acknowledged king, notwithstanding the opposition made by some of the Norman barons in favour of his brother Robert, whose character made him more popular than William, who, though brave, was ambitious and covetous. He endeavoured to enrich himself by all the conspiracies formed against him.

7. About this time the attention of all ranks was diverted from petty dissensions to the great enterprise of the crusaders. Robert, duke of Normandy, eager to engage in this expedition, mortgaged his dominions to his brother William, for the sum of ten thousand merks. This encrease of territory was of no advantage to England, from the continual insurrections of his new subjects; but so great was his desire to extend his dominions, that he purchased from the earl of Poitiers, who also was engaged in the crusades, the rich provinces of Guienne and Poitou, and was preparing to take possession of them when he was killed, while hunting in the new forest, by the rebounding of an arrow discharged at a stag by Walter Tyrrel, a French gentleman. It was remarked, that not only William, but Richard an elder brother, and also a son of his brother Robert, lost their lives in this forest; and as it had been violently seized by the Conqueror, to make room for his game, without making any compensation to those expelled from their habitations, the death of so many of his descendants in that place was considered as the just vengeance of heaven. William Rufus built Westminster hall and London bridge, Windsor castle, Dover

castle, and many others. He died in 1100, having reigned thirteen years.

1100.]

HENRY I.

[1135.

8. The youngest son of the Conqueror, took advantage of the absence of Robert, his elder brother, and contrived, within three days after the king's death, to get himself crowned. To gain the affections of his subjects, he granted a charter, by which many of their grievances were to be redressed, and privileges conferred; but from which they never derived any benefit. To secure his title to the crown, by uniting the Saxon and Norman interests, he married Matilda, daughter of Malcolm III., king of Scotland, and niece of Edgar Atheling. Robert having returned, laid claim to the English crown; but consented to resign his pretensions on receiving 3000 merks yearly, and the agreement, that if either died without issue, the other should inherit their dominions. Robert's indolence rendered him unfit to govern, and Henry took advantage of this to deprive him of his pension; and, instead of supporting his brother's authority, went over with an army to usurp his possessions. A battle ensued, in which, notwithstanding Robert's bravery, he was defeated and taken prisoner, with ten thousand of his followers.

9. Having settled the government, Henry returned to England, taking with him Robert, whom he cruelly detained in Cardiff castle during the remainder of his life. But the possession of his brother's dominions, which he had so much coveted, and which he had now the prospect of enjoying peaceably, was the cause of lasting sorrow to him. His only son, William, had been acknowledged as his successor by the English, and he was desirous that his Norman subjects should also recognise his title. For that purpose he took him over to Normandy, and, having accomplished his object, he was returning with a numerous retinue, when the vessel in which the prince was, struck upon a rock, and all perished. The king from that time to his death, fifteen years after, was never seen to smile. He died in 1135, at St Denis, in the

sixty-seventh year of his age, and left his daughter Matilda, widow of the emperor of Germany, and wife of Geoffrey, count of Anjou, heiress of all his dominions. Matilda found a rival in her cousin

1135.]

STEPHEN,

[1154.]

10. Son of the count de Blois, by Adela, a daughter of William the Conqueror. He hastened to England, and was proclaimed king; but, Matilda being supported by many of the nobility, a civil war ensued. At one period, Stephen's party being defeated, he was imprisoned, and Matilda crowned with great pomp; but a conspiracy was soon formed to restore Stephen; and, after various struggles, a treaty was entered into, by which Stephen was to reign during his life, and be succeeded by Henry, Matilda's son. Stephen did not long survive this agreement; he died at Dover in 1154.

11. During this reign the Scots and Welch took advantage of the disturbed state of the country to make inroads, in which they generally succeeded. The contentions which prevailed increased the rage for building castles so much, that upwards of eleven hundred were built during this disturbed reign. The clergy and monks were no less zealous in building monasteries and churches; to accomplish which, they exempted from penance those who contributed to these buildings. In Scotland, also, the same spirit prevailed. Most of the cathedrals and abbeys were built during the twelfth century. In the reign of David, in particular, many such magnificent edifices were erected.

1154.]

HENRY PLANTAGENET,

[1189.]

12. Or Fitz-Empress, as he was sometimes called from his mother, came to the throne with the consent of all parties, and, conscious of his power, wisely exerted it to remedy the disorders which prevailed in the kingdom. To diminish the power of the barons, who had become almost independent of their sovereign, he ordered many of their *castles to be demolished*, and granted charters to the prin-

cial cities, which was the commencement of English liberty.

13. He also endeavoured to limit the authority usurped by the pope and clergy, to which his predecessors had submitted. With the view of aiding his attempts, he raised Thomas a-Becket, who had hitherto been obsequious to his will, to be archbishop of Canterbury; but no sooner had he been thus elevated, than he used all his influence to encrease, instead of restricting the authority of the church. He took part with the pope against the king, and, by his violent and arrogant behaviour, disturbed the tranquillity of the kingdom. Four of Henry's attendants conspired to murder Becket, hoping thus to gain the king's favour; and he was slain at the altar in Canterbury cathedral. Henry yielded so far to the prejudices of the times, as to visit the tomb of Becket, which he approached barefoot, and submitted to be scourged by the monks.

14. Ireland, which had been early civilised, was at this period reduced to a very barbarous state. It was governed by five petty kings, one of whom having been expelled from his dominions, asked, and very readily obtained, assistance from Henry, who soon conquered not only the disputed territory, but all Ireland, which has ever since formed part of the British empire.

15. Henry was now the most powerful monarch of his time: the king of Scotland did him homage for his crown, and he was possessed of more than a third of France; but the unnatural dissensions and rebellions of his sons, which were excited by his queen Eleanor, deprived him of all comfort. Henry, the eldest, died, expressing contrition for his undutiful conduct; but, on hearing that John, his favourite son, had engaged with Richard in a confederacy against him, his violent grief brought on a fever, of which he died, near Saumur, in 1189, after a reign of thirty-four years.

16. In this reign justices were appointed to go the circuits, trials by ordeal and by combat were abolished, and laws enforced, in opposition to the clergy, for the

protection of the lives and property of the subjects. It was at this period that persecution for religious opinions was first suffered in England. About thirty persons who had come from Germany under Gerard, whose tenets the clergy disapproved, were branded in the forehead, publicly whipped, and then left to perish with cold and hunger, no one daring to relieve them.

1189.]

RICHARD I.,

[1199.

17. Surnamed *Cœur de Lion*, succeeded his father, and was crowned at Westminster, on 3d September, 1189, on which occasion a massacre of the Jews commenced. They were at that time numerous and wealthy, which exposed them to the rapacity and hatred of the English; and these feelings were encreased by the zeal of the crusaders, who esteemed it meritorious to plunder and kill a Jew. Five hundred, who had taken shelter in York castle, formed the dreadful resolution of killing one another, rather than be exposed to the fury of their persecutors. Richard vainly endeavoured to quell the tumult.

18. His thirst for military glory led him to engage with enthusiasm in the crusades; and to forward his vain-glorious enterprise, he sacrificed the interests of the kingdom, and hazarded the royal authority, by selling not only the revenues and property of the crown, but offices of trust and power; he even resigned the vassalage of Scotland for the paltry sum of 10,000 merks, though it was considered the greatest acquisition made by his father. Having collected all the treasure he could by any means procure, he embarked with his army to join the king of France.

19. Richard's valour placed him at the head of all the forces, and victory seemed to follow his attempts. He defeated the great Saladin, at Ascalon; but when within sight of Jerusalem, the grand object of their ambition, he found the army so much reduced by fatigue and famine, that he was glad to conclude a truce for three years; and having thus derived more honour than advantage from the enterprise, he prepared to return home;

where, from the distracted state of the country, his presence was much wanted.

20. Being shipwrecked near Aquileia, he attempted to return by Germany, in the disguise of a pilgrim; but was arrested by the duke of Austria, with whom he had quarreled in Palestine, and given up by him to the emperor of Germany, on condition of receiving part of the ransom. His subjects were ignorant of his fate for some time; but, when informed of it, they agreed to pay the large ransom of 150,000 merks of silver, and joyfully welcomed his return. He generously forgave his brother John, who had basely endeavoured to prolong his captivity. He was wounded by an archer, while besieging the castle of one of his rebellious subjects in Normandy: the wound mortified, from the unskilfulness of the surgeon, and he died in the forty-second year of his age, and tenth of his reign.

21. The celebrated Robin Hood lived in this reign; he plundered the rich and gave to the poor. Sherwood forest was the place where he and his followers generally resorted to, and so much were they feared, that four times their number seldom dared to attack them.

1199.]

JOHN

[1216.

22. Succeeded his brother Richard, and made himself in a short time be detested by his subjects for his cruelty and folly. The barons drew up a declaration of the rights of the people, which they called *Magna Charta*, and obliged him to sign at Runemede, near Windsor; but he soon showed he had no intention of keeping it, and so exasperated the barons by his wickedness and tyranny, that they invited over Louis, the dauphin of France, who took possession of London and the southern part of the kingdom.

23. John assembled an army with the intention of making one desperate effort for his crown; but passing, at an improper time, by the sea-shore, the overflowing of the tide carried away his carriages, treasures, and regalia.

This loss affected him so much as to encrease an illness under which he then laboured: he died at Newark castle on the 17th October, 1216; and thus the nation was freed from the calamities which threatened it either in the event of his defeat or of his success.

1216.]

HENRY III.,

[1272.]

24. Eldest son of John, was only nine years of age when he succeeded his father. The earl of Pembroke, a man of great integrity and abilities, held the office of Protector; and, by his prudent advice and conciliatory measures, the barons were induced to espouse the cause of their sovereign, and the French were soon expelled the kingdom; but Henry being of an irresolute and capricious temper, gave great offence to his subjects by partiality to foreigners and unworthy favourites; and the barons taking advantage of the weakness of the king, set his authority at defiance, and oppressed their vassals in the most lawless manner. Civil war would have ensued but for the interference of the clergy, whose threats of excommunication had more influence than the royal authority and the laws of the kingdom, in restraining the turbulence of the nobles.

25. A new cause of discontent occurred in 1255, by the king accepting the offer of the Pope to procure the crown of Sicily for Edmond, his second son. He expended large sums on this foolish attempt; and, on demanding farther supplies, the council of the nation refused, except on condition of his ratifying the former charter. To this he readily agreed; but had no sooner received the supplies than he violated his promise; which so enraged the barons, that, with the earl of Leicester at their head, they determined on making innovations in the government. A parliament was assembled, which was called the Mad Parliament; but some of the resolutions they made and the changes they introduced, produced lasting benefit.

26. From this time the Parliament began to assume its *present constitution*, the commons, or representatives of

the boroughs and counties, obtaining a place in the council of the nation, which had formerly been confined to the nobility and clergy. The earl of Leicester being desirous of keeping the government in his own hands, was resisted by prince Edward, who was very popular. A civil war ensued, and a battle was fought at Lewes, in which the king and prince were taken prisoners. On obtaining his liberty, prince Edward, with the assistance of the earl of Gloucester, raised an army, which Leicester, whose ambition had disgusted the people, was unable to withstand; and he was slain in battle at Evesham, in May 1265. The rebels had placed the king in front of the battle, and he was on the point of being slain, when he exclaimed, "I am Henry, your king!"

27. This victory restored peace to the kingdom, and the prince took advantage of the tranquillity that prevailed, to undertake an expedition to the Holy Land, where his valour revived the glory which Richard had formerly gained to the English name in the East. The Saracens, in consternation at his success, employed an assassin to kill him, who stabbed him in the arm with a poisoned weapon, and his life is said to have been saved by his queen Eleanor sucking the poison from the wound. Henry died in 1272, having reigned fifty-six years, the longest reign in the annals of England, with the exception of that of George III. In this reign a charter was renewed to the inhabitants of Newcastle for a license to dig coal, on payment of £100 a-year.

1272.]

EDWARD I.

[1307.

28. Edward was returning from Palestine when he heard of the death of his father; but, fearing no opposition, he remained on the continent for more than a year, and was joyfully welcomed on his arrival in England, and crowned at Westminster, August 19th, 1274, by Robert, archbishop of Canterbury. He immediately employed himself in correcting the abuses which the commotions of Henry's reign, and the weakness of his government, had occasioned. The plans he adopted were at once generous

and prudent ; affording protection to the lower orders, and diminishing the arbitrary power of the higher. He carefully investigated the conduct of the judges, fining or dismissing such as were found to be negligent or corrupt, and punishing crimes and disorders of all kinds, with a rigour which their great prevalence made necessary.

29. The adulteration of the coin was at this time much complained of, and was imputed to the Jews. For this crime, 280 were hanged in London at one time, besides those who suffered in other parts of the kingdom. Their goods were confiscated, and part bestowed on such as were willing to become converts to Christianity ; but few were induced to do so, notwithstanding the misery to which they were reduced ; and Edward, prompted by rapacity and mistaken zeal, resolved on clearing the kingdom of the hated and despised race. About 15,000 were plundered and banished ; and few comparatively of that nation have since resided in England.

30. Llewellen, prince of Wales, having refused to do homage for his principality, Edward took advantage of this to invade the country with an army which they had no power to resist. The Welsh, who had maintained their independence when the rest of the kingdom yielded to the Roman and Saxon conquerors, made a brave resistance to Edward's forces ; but famine obliged them to submit. They afterwards made a vain attempt to recover their independence ; but Llewellen was slain in battle, and his brother David put to death as a traitor, for attempting to defend his native country, and his own authority. Edward, aware that nothing contributed so much to foster their military ardour and pride of ancient glory, as the traditional songs in which the heroic deeds of their ancestors were extolled, formed the barbarous resolution of putting the bards to death, and has by this action left a deep stain on his memory. For this purpose it is said he assembled them all at Conway. A poem has been written by Gray on the subject. Edward speedily introduced English laws into Wales, and it has ever since

remained united to England, the king's eldest son having the title of Prince of Wales.

31. The death of Alexander III. of Scotland in 1286, and of his grand-daughter, exposed the vacant throne to the claims of various competitors. With the view of preventing civil war, it was agreed to refer the matter to the decision of Edward, whose ambition was excited, by this favourable opportunity, to assert his own superiority over that kingdom. He summoned the Scottish barons to meet him at Norham, and decided in favour of Baliol, whose character he imagined best suited to his purpose of treating the Scots as his subjects. But the indignities offered to Baliol and the demands made by Edward upon the kingdom of Scotland, roused even the timid Baliol to revolt; and Edward marched northward with numerous forces, entering Scotland without opposition. Berwick had been taken by assault; siege was laid to Dunbar, and a battle fought in which the Scots lost 20,000 men. The castles of Dunbar and Roxburgh surrendered, as did those of Edinburgh and Stirling, after a feeble resistance. Edward advanced as far north as Aberdeen and Elgin, receiving, wherever he went, submission and homage even from the turbulent Highlanders. Returning with his victorious army, he took away with him a stone which was regarded by the Scots with superstitious veneration, as the palladium of their monarchy, and had been carefully preserved at Scone. He also destroyed their ancient records; and whatever might assert the independence of the kingdom, and refute the English claims of superiority over it.

32. Edward next engaged in an attempt to recover Guienne, which had been wrested from him by Philip of France; but the money granted by parliament not being sufficient to defray the expenses of the war, he exerted his power to obtain larger supplies in an arbitrary and oppressive manner, which led to murmurs from all classes, notwithstanding the regard generally entertained for the king. Indeed the grievances, at this period, seemed

sufficient to have kindled civil war; but the king had prudence enough to retract the measures which had given offence, and agreed to ratify the charters formerly given, with the addition of a clause to secure the nation from all imposts and taxes without consent of parliament. And thus the English nation, by their perseverance, had the honour of extorting, from one of their ablest and most ambitious monarchs, concessions which had been contended for during nearly a century. The validity of this great charter was never afterwards formally disputed, and it is still regarded as the basis of English government.

33. While Edward was absent in Flanders, the Scottish nation, roused by the heroic deeds of the celebrated Sir William Wallace, resolved to free themselves from the yoke which the unjust severity of the governors appointed over them by Edward had rendered very grievous. Wallace, with a small band of followers, greatly annoyed the English; and, at length defeated an army of 40,000 in the battle of Stirling. He afterwards expelled the English from Scotland, and took possession of the fortresses on the borders. He then urged his army to proceed into England. They ravaged the country with fire and sword, as far as Durham; and returned, loaded with spoil. He was then made regent of the kingdom. Edward hastened, at the head of 100,000 men, to recover the conquest he had formerly made, and gained a complete victory in the battle of Falkirk, July 22d, 1299; but he did not think the conquest secure, so long as Wallace lived; and therefore used every means to have him taken prisoner. He was at last betrayed by his pretended friend, Sir John Menteith, and carried in chains to London, where he was condemned, and put to death for having defended the liberties of his country against an oppressive enemy.

34. Robert Bruce, grandson of one of the competitors for the Scottish crown, having escaped from England, where he had been detained a prisoner, resolved, after the death of Wallace, to attempt to rescue his country from

slavery. He made known his intention to a number of the nobility; and, by the bold declaration of his sentiments, roused the nation from their dejected state. The English were attacked, and expelled the kingdom; and Bruce, having had his authority acknowledged, was solemnly crowned at Scone by the Bishop of St Andrews. Edward found, that though he had twice conquered the Scots, he must again subdue them; and vowing revenge against the whole nation for their repeated revolts, he again assembled an army, and was preparing to enter Scotland, secure of success, when he sickened and died at Carlisle, on the 7th July 1307, in the sixty-ninth year of his age, and thirty-fifth of his reign. He enjoined, with his last breath, his son and successor to prosecute the enterprise, till Scotland should be subdued.

35. Edward was greatly revered by his own subjects, who had derived many advantages under his reign. He was possessed of qualities which eminently fitted him for rectifying the abuses which prevailed in the kingdom at the time of his accession. The improvement he made in the laws gained for him the appellation of the *English Justinian*. Though disposed to be arbitrary in his own proceedings, he took care that his subjects did justice to each other. He permitted the barons to entail their estates, but was careful to restrain the usurpations of the church. He encouraged commerce, and patronised literature; and in his reign the number of students at Oxford exceeded that of any other period.

1307.]

EDWARD II.,

[1327.

36. Only surviving son of Edward I. by Eleanor of Castile, was in his 23d year when he succeeded to the throne. His disposition was gentle, which rendered him unfit to govern a turbulent people; and his indolence inclining him to be governed by favourites, involved him in troubles during all his life. Instead of observing his father's dying injunctions, to prosecute the war with Scotland, he soon disbanded his army, and returned to England; where one of his first actions was to send for Gave-

ston, a young foreigner, who had been banished on account of the great influence he possessed over young Edward, and whom his father had enjoined him never to recall. He showed such immoderate fondness for this favourite, loading him with all the riches and honours he had it in his power to bestow, that the barons were highly offended; and still more so, by his being appointed Regent of the kingdom, while Edward went to France, to marry the princess Isabella.

37. The hatred of the nobles towards Gaveston was encreased by the ostentatious display he made of his power; and they united with the earl of Lancaster in requiring of the king his banishment. To this he was obliged to consent; but showed his reluctance, by appointing him Lord Lieutenant of Ireland; where he lived in great state for a year, and was then recalled by Edward. Forgetful of the past he resumed his insolent and ostentatious behaviour, and became more than ever the object of detestation to the nobility. He was again banished, and soon after invited back from Flanders, and re-instated in his former authority. This so enraged the people, that the earl of Lancaster raised an army, and went in pursuit of the king and his favourite. The king left him in Scarborough castle, which was deemed impregnable; while he went to York, in hopes of raising an army for his protection. Gaveston was obliged to surrender; and was taken to Warwick, where he was beheaded, without regard to the promises made on his surrendering.

38. Edward's resentment was great on hearing of the death of his favourite; but he was induced to make peace with his barons. He then prepared to invade Scotland, where only two fortresses, those of Berwick and Stirling, remained in his possession. With an army of 100,000, he advanced into Scotland. Bruce collected an army to meet him, which did not exceed thirty thousand; but they were men of distinguished bravery, and rendered desperate by their situation. Bruce selected a favourable *position for his army* at Bannockburn, two miles from

Stirling, and there awaited the approach of the English army. They arrived on the evening of the 24th June, 1324, and a contest immediately ensued between the two bodies of cavalry. Robert engaged in single combat with Henry de Bohun, and, with one stroke of his battle-ax, slew him in sight of both armies; on which the English horse fled in precipitation to their main body. Early next morning Edward advanced with his army, towards the Scots; the left wing of the cavalry hastened to the attack, and fell among covered pits, which had been prepared by Bruce for their overthrow. The earl of Gloucester, their leader, was slain, and they were pushed off the field, and pursued with great loss in sight of the whole line of infantry, by Sir James Douglas, the commander of the Scottish cavalry. The alarm occasioned by this unfortunate commencement, was increased by observing on the heights what appeared to them an army approaching to surround them. This was a number of waggons and sumpter-boys collected by Robert. The stratagem took effect; the English threw down their arms, fled, and were pursued with great slaughter till they reached Berwick. The king narrowly escaped, by taking shelter in Dunbar, from which he went by sea to Berwick. The Scots, besides immense booty, took prisoners many persons of rank, who were humanely treated, and whose ransom brought great wealth to the victors.

39. The independence of Scotland was secured by this memorable battle, and such an impression did their defeat make on the minds of the English, that Bruce was permitted to enter England without opposition. He besieged Carlisle without success; but took Berwick by assault. Elated with his prosperity, he sent his brother Edward to Ireland with 6000 men, and followed himself with more numerous forces. The Irish, suffering from the oppression of the English government, fled to the standard of the Scots, regarding them as deliverers; but a grievous famine obliged Robert to return to Scotland with diminished forces; his brother was defeated, and slain by the English

near Dundalk; and thus terminated a project too extensive for the means of the Scots.

40. Besides suffering from the invasion of the Scots, the insurrection of the Irish, and a rebellion in Wales, Edward had now to contend with his own nobility, who, taking advantage of the public calamities, endeavoured to establish their own independence on the ruins of the throne; and Edward having made choice of a new favourite, named Hugh de Spencer, and imprudently bestowed on him estates of which some of the barons had been dispossessed; this was made a pretext for the earl of Lancaster and his party to fly to arms. They pillaged and destroyed the lands of Spencer, and procured, by violence, sentence of perpetual exile against him and his father. In this the king was obliged to acquiesce; but, having concerted measures with his friends, he attacked Lancaster, who, to obtain assistance, declared what had been long suspected, his alliance with Scotland. He fled north, but was pursued by the king, and seized without resistance. He was condemned and executed near Pontefract, one of his own castles, with the same marks of indignity he had ordered to be exercised towards Gaveston. Edward made one more fruitless attempt against Scotland; and hostilities with that kingdom were terminated by a truce of thirteen years.

41. Edward had now a formidable enemy in his impetuous and profligate queen Isabella. She had gone to France on pretence of adjusting some differences between her brother Charles and Edward, but having artfully got the young prince sent over, she entered into the conspiracies, and her court became the asylum of all the malcontents of the kingdom. She positively refused to return, till Spencer should be banished; and having engaged in her favour the earl of Kent, step-brother to Edward, and obtained the assistance of count Hainault, (with whose daughter, Philippa, she had affianced her son Edward) she, with the secret protection of her brother, *raised an army*, with which she landed on the coast of

Suffolk, and was joined by many nobles and prelates. Edward having vainly endeavoured to rouse the citizens of London to a sense of their duty, was pursued to Bristol by the earl of Kent, and retired to Wales. The elder Spencer, who had nearly attained his ninetieth year, was condemned and executed by the rebellious barons, without accusation or trial.

42. Edward, disappointed of assistance in Wales, took shipping for Ireland; but, being driven back by contrary winds, he was discovered in the mountains of Wales, and confined under the custody of the earl of Leicester in the castle of Kenilworth. The younger Spencer was executed, as his father had been, without trial; and the earl of Arundel, the only nobleman who had maintained his loyalty, was put to death at the instigation of Mortimer, the guilty favourite of the queen. A parliament, summoned at Westminster, voted the deposition of the king, on account of incapacity for government. The prince, already declared Regent, was placed on the throne; and the king's resignation extorted from him by terror. But it was not long till the people were sensible of the artifices by which the queen had imposed on them, and, in proportion as she became the object of hatred, the dethroned monarch was regarded with pity, and even with reverence, on account of his misfortunes. Edward was taken from the custody of the earl of Leicester, who was thought to treat him with too much gentleness and respect, and delivered to the care of lords Berkeley, Montravers, and Gournay: the two latter treated him with every species of indignity, seeming desirous to hasten his death by his sufferings. Mortimer, fearing a revolution in his favour, sent private orders to dispatch him without delay; which was done during Berkeley's illness, in the most shocking and barbarous manner possible. This tragic event took place on the 21st September 1327, in the forty-third year of his age, and twentieth of his reign.

43. England was afflicted with famine during several years of this reign: long-continued rain and cold weather

not only destroyed the crops, but also occasioned mortality among the cattle, which raised all sorts of provisions to an enormous price. One of the delusions of this age was, that persons affected with leprosy had conspired with the Saracens, to poison the springs and fountains, and many of them were burned alive on this imputation. It was during this reign that Philip of France, bent on the ruin of the Knights-Templars, (an Order established during the fervour of the Crusades) ordered them all to be committed to prison in one day, the most enormous crimes being imputed to them. Above a hundred were put to torture, to extort confession of guilt. Many perished in their tormenters' hands; others, to obtain relief from suffering, acknowledged whatever was required, and Philip, as if their guilt had been thus established, proceeded, with the concurrence of Clement V., who was then in France, to abolish the order, and confiscate their treasures. The grand-master of the order, and another great officer, were brought to a scaffold in front of Notre Dame. A pardon was offered on the one side, and a fire on the other; but, nobly persisting in protestations of their own innocence, and that of their order, they were hurried into the flames. Edward left two sons and two daughters,—Edward, his successor; John, who died young at Perth; Jane, married to David Bruce, king of Scotland; and Eleanor, married to the count of Gueldres.

1327.]

EDWARD III.,

[1377.

44. Was only fifteen years of age at the time of his father's murder; and was at first obliged to submit to the queen and Mortimer; all whose conduct tended to encrease the hatred of the nation towards them. The king of Scotland, though advanced in years, and in declining health, had taken advantage of the weakness of the government, to invade the north of England. Edward displayed on this occasion the bravery which afterwards so much distinguished him; but was disappointed of the honour of victory, by the sudden retreat of the Scots; and by Mortimer's making a treaty of peace with Robert,

in which he agreed to the marriage of Jane, Edward's sister, with David, Robert's son ; and resigned the claim of superiority over Scotland, on payment by Robert of 30,000 merks. This treaty, though ratified by parliament, gave great offence to the nation. Mortimer being suspicious of the designs of the princes of the blood, seized the earl of Kent, who had been persuaded by Mortimer that Edward still lived, and who was desirous of atoning for his former conduct, by attempting to re-instate him on the throne. Kent was condemned for this to lose his life: but so greatly was he beloved, that it was with difficulty a person could be found to put the sentence in execution. The earl of Lancaster was imprisoned, on pretence of having assented to the conspiracy, and the estates of many prelates and nobles were confiscated; with which Mortimer enriched himself and family.

45. Edward, now in his eighteenth year, determined to be no longer fettered by a minister guilty of such crimes; and he communicated his intention to some noblemen, who fully entered into his views. The queen and Mortimer resided in the castle of Nottingham, which was strictly guarded: the barons gained admission by a subterraneous passage, and suddenly seized Mortimer, in spite of the queen's entreaties. He was accused before parliament of having usurped regal power, of having procured the murder of the late king, embezzled the public treasure, and of various other crimes: and from the notoriety of the facts, he was condemned without examining a witness, or hearing his defence. He was executed on the 29th Nov. 1331, at the Elmes, near London; and it is worthy of remark, that this sentence was reversed by parliament, twenty years after, in favour of Mortimer's son, on account of this illegal manner of proceeding. The queen was imprisoned in the castle of Rising; where, for twenty-five years, she suffered the contempt and detestation due to her crimes.

46. On assuming the reins of government, Edward

diligently and judiciously applied himself to redress the grievances which had arisen from the want or abuse of authority; and his ambition soon found an opportunity of exerting itself in endeavouring to regain power in Scotland, which had been yielded by Mortimer during his minority. For this purpose he assisted Baliol against David, son of Robert Bruce. Scotland was subdued by a handful of men; Baliol was crowned at Scone, and David sent to France, with Jane his betrothed wife, sister to Edward. Baliol, from his connection with England, was obnoxious to the Scots, who lost no time in attacking him. He was routed and chased into England; thus losing his kingdom as suddenly as he had acquired it. Edward, however, unwilling to lose the ascendancy which Baliol's accession to the crown had given him in that kingdom, prepared to re-instate him. A battle was fought at Halidon hill, in which nearly 30,000 Scots fell, while the English lost only one knight, one esquire, and thirteen private soldiers. Leaving a considerable body with Baliol, Edward returned to England; the Scots being obliged to recognise his superiority over their kingdom, and to resign Berwick, Dunbar, Roxburgh, Edinburgh, and all the south-east of Scotland, to be annexed to the English crown. Baliol was now regarded by the Scots with still greater hatred, as the cause of their degradation; and, in 1335, Edward was again obliged to march an army into Scotland for his protection; and also, in the following year;—the Scots never failing to take the first opportunity to revolt.

47. Edward's attention was now directed to France; the crown of which he claimed (notwithstanding the law of France excluded females,) in right of his mother Isabella, daughter of Philip the Fair, and sister of the three kings who succeeded him. He entered France with an army of fifty thousand. Philip approached with an army double in number, which Edward was afraid to encounter. They faced each other, and sent defiances for several days; when the result of the great preparations, was

Edward's retiring into Flanders, and disbanding his army. He had, however, too much spirit entirely to relinquish the enterprise: a fleet was prepared, and the first naval engagement noticed between England and France, took place on the 13th June, 1340, near the coast of Flanders. The battle was fierce and bloody; 30,000 French were killed, with two of their Admirals; many of their ships taken; the loss of the English being small in comparison of the importance of the victory. Edward now marched to the frontiers of France with an army of a hundred thousand: challenges were given by both kings, and, while the armies lay in expectation of an action, they were conciliated by the interposition of Jane, countess-dowager of Hainault, and a truce concluded which was, however, of short duration.

48. Edward again invaded France: Caen was taken and pillaged, and the army advanced to Paris, burning towns and villages, as they went; while the French attempted to stop their progress, by destroying the bridges. Philip, with an army of 120,000, hastened to take revenge; and on the 26th August, 1346, the armies met near the village of Cressy. Edward disposed his small army of 30,000, into three divisions, and waited the approach of the enemy, who commenced the attack with great fury, on the division commanded by the prince of Wales, who set an example of valour, which was imitated by his followers. Edward surveyed the battle from an eminence, and when urged to send assistance to the prince, he refused, saying, "I leave the honour of the day to him, confident that he will be able to repel the enemy without assistance." This speech inspired them with fresh courage: the French army was put to flight, and pursued with great slaughter. Philip had a horse killed under him; but re-mounted, and maintained the combat till forced off the field.

49. On that, and the ensuing day, 30,000, including many of the nobility, also the kings of Bohemia and Majorca, were slain; the crest of the former, three ostrich fea-

thers, and the motto, *Ich dien*, (I serve), was adopted by the prince of Wales, in memory of this battle, which was remarkable for the small number of English slain. Edward's proceedings after the battle displayed great prudence. Instead of being induced, by prosperity, to attempt the conquest of France, he limited his ambition to the taking of Calais, that an easy entrance might be obtained to his territory of Guienne. He accordingly marched towards that place, after the interval of a few days, spent in interring the slain, and after a siege of nearly twelve months, John de Vienne, the brave commander, was compelled, by famine, to submit. Provoked by their long resistance, Edward would only agree to spare their lives, on condition that six of the most considerable citizens should be delivered up for execution. Eustace de St Pierre offered himself; five others followed his example; and these self-devoted men, bare-footed and bare-headed, with ropes about their necks, as prescribed by Edward, laid the keys of the city at his feet. They were spared at the intercession of Philippa, Edward's queen, who had just arrived from England. The surrender took place on the 4th August, 1347.

50. While Edward was thus successful in France, David Bruce, who had been recalled to Scotland, invaded England at the head of 50,000 men. He had advanced to Durham, committing great ravages and devastation, when queen Philippa speedily collected an army of 12,000, which she entrusted to lord Percy; and, riding through the ranks, she exhorted them to do their duty. They met David at Neville's-cross, near Durham; and such was the valour with which her presence inspired them, that the Scots never received a more fatal blow than on this occasion; 15,000 were slain; the king, and many noblemen taken prisoners, and carried to London.

51. Edward, having taken possession of Calais, ordered the inhabitants to leave it, and peopled it with English; a policy which was probably the means of preserving that

fortress so long to his successors. A truce was concluded with France for the following year; and, during that time, Calais, almost the only advantage gained by Edward's victories, was nearly lost by the perfidy of an Italian, to whom it was entrusted. This man agreed to deliver it up for 20,000 crowns; but the treachery was discovered, and Edward, with the prince of Wales, went over in time to make it turn to the disadvantage of the enemy. It was about this time, that, to promote the spirit of emulation and obedience, the Order of the Garter was instituted. The number received into it was twenty-five, besides the sovereign; and, as the number has never been encreased, it continues as honourable a mark of distinction as ever.

52. In 1349, the plague which had first appeared in Asia, and had spread over most of that country, and Europe, now ravaged England. In London alone above 50,000 were swept away by that dreadful pestilence; and it was computed that nearly a third of the population of every country afflicted by it, perished.

53. During the truce with France, Philip died, and was succeeded by his son John. The kingdom was at this time disturbed by intestine commotions; and, on the expiry of the truce, Edward again invaded France, and advanced from Calais with an army, to which he gave full license to plunder and ravage as they went. They came to St Omer, where John was, and followed him to Hesdin; but, as he still declined an engagement, Edward returned to Calais, from which he went over to defend England from a threatened invasion of the Scots. They had surprised Berwick, and collected an army, with the intention of ravaging the north of England; but, on the approach of Edward, they retired, leaving the country from Berwick to Edinburgh exposed to the enemy. Baliol had accompanied Edward; but finding the Scots still averse to acknowledge his title, he finally resigned his pretensions to the crown, and received a pension of £2000.

54. The prince of Wales, who had been left in France,

and had been successful at the head of an expedition, now resolved to penetrate farther into that country. He had entered the province of Berri, intending to proceed to Normandy; but, finding the bridges on the Loire destroyed, and the passes carefully guarded, he was obliged to think of retreating, and was overtaken by the French army, near Poitiers. The cardinal Perigord anxiously endeavoured to prevent, by an accommodation, the farther shedding of blood: but John required concessions, to which the prince would not agree, and he commenced preparations for the battle, which displayed the courage of a young hero, and the prudence of an experienced commander. His army did not exceed 12,000; while that of the enemy amounted to 60,000. A desperate encounter took place, in which the French were routed, and John taken prisoner.

55. The prince's conduct towards his captive reflects higher honour on his character than the brilliant victory he had gained. He met the king with every mark of respect and sympathy, acknowledged the praise due to his valour, and ascribed his own success to an over-ruling Providence, which controls all human efforts. He waited on him at supper, refusing to take a place at table; and John received in captivity, honours refused him when on the throne. This memorable victory was gained on September 19th, 1356. The prince having concluded a truce with the Dauphin, (the first who had received that title, by the re-union of the province of Dauphiny to the crown), for two years, he conducted his captive to England. They landed at Southwark, on the 24th May following, and were met by a great concourse of all ranks: John, in royal attire, and splendidly mounted, entered London; the prince, in plain attire, rode by his side, on a small black horse. Edward received him with as much courtesy as if he had come to pay him a friendly visit: he was lodged with his young son, in the palace of the Savoy, and continued to experience the greatest kindness. He found a companion in misfortune, in the king of Scot-

land, who had been eleven years captive in England : but as Edward received no advantage from his captivity, he was liberated at the ransom of 100,000 merks sterling.

56. After the expiry of the truce, and another invasion, which the Dauphin repelled with much prudence, peace was concluded at Bretagny, in 1361 ; it being stipulated that Edward should renounce all claim to the crown of France, and the provinces possessed by his ancestors, for which he was to receive others : John's ransom was fixed at three millions of crowns of gold. In consequence of this treaty, John went over to Calais, where he was met by Edward ; the treaty was ratified, and the monarchs parted with mutual expressions of friendship.

57. John was desirous of faithfully fulfilling his part of the treaty ; but met with obstacles in the reluctance with which many of the towns submitted to English authority ; and, to adjust the differences which thus arose, he returned to England, where he died in 1363, and was succeeded by the Dauphin, Charles the Wise, which appellation he merited by the prudent policy by which he surmounted the difficulties of his situation.

58. The subjects of Peter, king of Castile, having revolted on account of his cruelty, he applied to the prince of Wales for assistance. With the consent of Edward, the prince went to Spain, and defeated, with 30,000 men, Henry, Peter's opponent, who had an army of 100,000 ; but the prince had reason to regret having re-instated on the throne an ungrateful tyrant, who now refused the stipulated pay to the English forces ; and finding his own health impaired by the climate, and his soldiers perishing from sickness, he was obliged to return to Guienne, without compensation ; and he soon found how much prejudice this expedition had done to his interests in France. Involved in debt, and unable, from his declining health, to exert his usual activity, Charles took advantage of his situation, to invade the southern provinces ; and young Edward, destitute of the means of defence, was obliged to return to England.

59. Edward, incensed at the proceedings of the French king, embarked with an army; but was so long delayed by contrary winds, that he was forced to abandon the enterprise, and all his attempts to recover the provinces proving unsuccessful, he concluded a treaty, which deprived him of all his possessions, except Bourdeaux and Bayonne; and all his conquests, except Calais.

60. The prince of Wales died, after a lingering illness, in the forty-sixth year of his age, leaving a character illustrious for virtue, and unstained by vice. The king survived this melancholy event only a year. He died June 28th, 1377, in the sixty-fifth year of his age, and the fifty-first of his reign.

61. The disappointments which attended the decline of his life, corresponded not with the splendid scenes which had occupied the commencement of it. Besides the loss of his foreign dominions, he felt the decay of his authority at home, and experienced, in the inconstancy of his subjects, the influence of present fortune in procuring popular favour or contempt. The reign of Edward is regarded as one of the most glorious in the annals of England; and it is certain, that not only was the valour of the nation then carried to the highest pitch of glory, but also that a longer period of domestic tranquillity was enjoyed than in any former period, or, than for many ages following it. Edward endeavoured to introduce and promote the woollen manufacture, by encouraging foreign weavers to settle in England, and prohibiting the wearing of any cloth but of British manufacture. The first toll for mending the highways was imposed in this reign: it was for repairing the road between St Giles and Temple-bar. The magnificent castle of Windsor was built by Edward, and also St Stephen's chapel, which was used for the house of Commons; every county being assessed to send a certain number of masons, tiles, and carpenters. The use of the French language was abolished at this period, probably from the antipathy which Edward's wars excited towards that nation. The payment of the tribute levied by the

church of Rome from the reign of John, was resisted by Edward, with the advice of his council.

1377.]

RICHARD II.,

[1397.]

62. Only surviving son of Edward, prince of Wales, succeeded his grandfather in 1377, when only eleven years of age, his uncles the dukes of Lancaster, York, and Gloucester, being appointed guardians during his minority. He was crowned at Westminster; on which occasion the champion, for the first time, it is said, entered the hall, to give the challenge to defend the king's right to the throne,—a practice which has been continued by all his successors.

63. The minds of the people were at this time in a state of great excitement, from the seditious doctrines promulgated by John Ball; and the imposition of a tax of a shilling a-head on every person, rich and poor, above fifteen years of age, (to recruit the treasury exhausted by expensive wars) caused great discontent; and they were ready to seize the first opportunity of proceeding to acts of violence. This was soon afforded by the improper conduct of one of the collectors in exacting the tax, which so enraged a man named Wat Tyler, that he knocked him dead on the spot. The action was applauded by the people; hundreds, thousands, quickly assembled; and having chosen Tyler for their leader, they proceeded to London, saying, It was now time to take vengeance on their oppressors, and to vindicate their liberty. The rabble exceeded 100,000, by the time they assembled at Blackheath. They killed all the gentlemen they met, plundering and burning the houses of the rich.

64. The king, though only 15 years of age, courageously went out to a body of the rioters, desiring to know their grievances; and, on promising them redress, they quietly dispersed. Another body of the rebels broke into the Tower, and killed the Primate, Chancellor, and other persons of distinction. The king, passing through Smithfield, met Wat Tyler, who desired a conference; during which he spoke with so much insolence, that the Mayor

struck him to the ground with his mace; on which the king's knights dispatched him. The mutineers, seeing their leader fall, prepared to revenge his death; at this critical moment, the king, with wonderful coolness and presence of mind, rode up alone to the enraged multitude, saying, in a courteous manner, "Are you angry for the loss of your leader? Follow me, I am your king: I will be your leader." The populace, overwhelmed and struck by the familiarity of his address, followed into the fields, where they were quietly dismissed, and the same promises which had been given to the others.

65. The nobility, on hearing of the king's death, flocked around him; and Richard took the field at the head of an army of 40,000. The rebels were forced to submit, and several of the ringleaders were put to death. The conduct of the king on this occasion raised the expectations of the people; but they were soon disappointed. As he advanced in years, he discovered a want of caution or of judgement, in every enterprise in which he engaged; he irritated the people by revoking the charters granted them by his predecessors, and disgusted the nobles by his partiality to favourites.

66. The Scots having obtained the assistance of French cavalry, to enable them to renew their ravages in England, Richard levied an army of 60,000, with which he entered Scotland by Berwick. The Scots did not attempt resistance; but, while Richard advanced towards the East, destroying all in his way, and reducing to ashes Edinburgh, Perth, Dundee, and other towns, the king entered England by the West, ravaged Cumberland, Westmoreland and Lancashire, and returned with booty to their own country. Richard was urged to enter the West, and take revenge on the enemy; but so impatient was he to return to his usual amusements, that he sent back his army without having gained any advantage from his enterprise.

67. The jealousy of the nobles was now strongly excited by the unbounded liberality of the king towards

de Vere, earl of Oxford, whom he had created Marquis of Dublin, (a title before unknown in England,) then duke of Ireland, and conferred on him the sovereignty of that island. On pretence that the king was unable to govern, the duke of Gloucester and his party framed a commission, by which a council of fourteen persons was appointed, and the sovereign power transferred to them for twelve months. Those of the nobility who disapproved of this measure, were accused, and condemned as guilty of treason, for actions which their duty of allegiance bound them to perform. Sir Simon Burley, a person of great merit, who had been appointed preceptor to Richard, by the late king, was, on account of his supposed influence with Richard, very severely dealt with; and though the queen, sister to the king of Bohemia, (called, from her amiable qualities, *The good queen Anne*) kneeled for three hours before the duke of Gloucester, pleading for the life of Burley, she was sternly refused. His execution, more than that of any other, made a deep impression on Richard.

68. It could not have been expected that the king, so entirely deprived of power as to be unable to rescue his adherents from the resentment of his enemies, would soon regain his authority; and yet, in less than a twelvemonth, he declared, in council, his resolution of exercising his right of sovereignty; which meeting with no opposition, he removed from the council those obnoxious to him, and placed others in their room. He exercised with moderation the authority he had resumed; and for eight succeeding years a great degree of tranquillity prevailed. The French war was scarcely heard of, and the Scots made only one inroad, occasioned more from rivalry between the families of Percy and Douglas, than from any national quarrel. A battle was fought at Otterborne, in which Percy was taken prisoner, Douglas slain, and the victory remained undecided. A truce with France for 25 years was concluded; and, to strengthen the friendship between the two crowns, Richard, now a widower, was affianced

to Isabella (daughter of Charles), then only seven years of age.

69. In 1397, the ambitious Gloucester again formed designs against the king; which coming to his knowledge, he ordered that nobleman to be arrested and taken to Calais, where he was detained in custody, and after some time secretly murdered. A quarrel having taken place between the dukes of Hereford and Norfolk, which was to be decided by duel, Richard prevented the combat, and sentenced them to banishment—Hereford for ten years, and Norfolk for life. The duke of Lancaster, Hereford's father, having died soon after, the king seized on his estates, though he had granted Hereford, before his departure, letters-patent, empowering him to enter immediately on possession of any estate that might fall to him during his banishment.

70. Hereford, now duke of Lancaster, had acquired, by his virtues and abilities, general esteem: he was connected with most of the nobility; and a sense of common interest easily induced them to take part in his resentment of the king's injustice. Richard having been so imprudent as to go over to Ireland to revenge the death of his cousin, the earl of March, presumptive heir to the crown, who had been slain in a skirmish with the natives; Lancaster seized the opportunity of his absence, to put his schemes of vengeance into execution. He landed in Yorkshire with a retinue of sixty persons; and, avowing his purpose to be no other than the recovery of his possessions unjustly detained from him, he invited his friends to second him. Mal-contented from all quarters joined him, and the army being destitute of zeal for the royal cause, he soon was master of the kingdom.

71. The king hastened over with a body of 20,000 men; but even this army, so inferior to the enemy, gradually deserted him; till not above 6000 followed his standard. He fled to Anglesea, purposing to embark for Ireland or France; but Lancaster sent to him the earl of *Northumberland*, with professions of loyalty; and having,

by treachery, got possession of the king's person, carried him to his enemy at Flint castle, 1st September, 1399. He was conducted to London, experiencing every possible indignity by the way; while his rival was every where received with acclamations. A new parliament was summoned by Lancaster, in the king's name; a charge of 33 articles was drawn up against the king; and though every one might have been objected to, one person alone, the bishop of Carlisle, had courage to plead in his master's behalf; for which he was immediately arrested by order of Lancaster, and thrown into prison. The king was formally deposed by both houses of parliament, and the vacant throne claimed by Lancaster; and, no opposition being made, the crown was placed on his head. Richard was conveyed to Pontefract castle, where he soon perished, some historians say by assassination, and others by starvation, in the 34th year of his age and 23d of his reign, leaving no posterity.

72. In this reign Wickliffe publicly inveighed against the errors of the church of Rome. He was cited to appear before the bishop of London, a bull having been issued by Gregory XI. to take him into custody, and examine into the scope of his opinions; but he had powerful friends, who protected him, and the number of his proselytes, called *Lollards*, rapidly encreased. He completed a translation of the Scriptures in the English language; to suppress which a bill was brought into the house of Lords, but was rejected.

73. The house of Commons acquired an accession of power during this reign, and appointed, for the first time, a Speaker to preserve order, and maintain the necessary forms. The person made choice of was Peter de la Mare. Richard lived in a style of greater magnificence than any of his predecessors: his household consisted of 10,000 persons; and when it is considered that this enormous retinue had tables provided at the king's expense, it is not surprising that such prodigality excited public discontent. The creation of peers by patent was introduced.

during this reign, Lord Beauchamp being the first advanced in this manner.

1399.]

HENRY IV.,

[1413.]

74. Duke of Lancaster, who had been the means of dethroning Richard, was crowned October 13th, 1399, by the title of Henry IV. He was eldest surviving son of John of Gaunt, fourth son of Edward III.; therefore, in addition to the unwarrantable manner of procuring it, his title to the crown was not good, the right heir being Roger Mortimer, grandson of the duke of Clarence, third son of Edward; and this occasioned the contests between the houses of York and Lancaster, which, for many years, deluged the kingdom with blood.

75. Henry possessed many qualities fitting him to maintain the power he had acquired; but the utmost prudence and vigilance could not protect him from a succession of conspiracies and rebellions against his usurped authority. To such a degree had the animosities and resentments of the nobility been inflamed by the late convulsions in the state, that, at the first meeting of Parliament, forty gauntlets were thrown down; and though the king's authority was so great as to prevent the combats taking place, yet the dissatisfaction of many of the nobles was expressed by open rebellion. The most dangerous was that of the earl of Northumberland, to whose assistance Henry owed the crown, and who was offended by being refused permission to ransom his relative, the earl of March, who had been taken prisoner by Owen Glendower.

76. At this time the Scots, who, under the earl of Douglas, had invaded the north of England, were defeated at Hambeldon, and Douglas and others of the nobility taken prisoners by Northumberland, and conveyed to Alnwick castle. Henry sent orders not to treat for their ransom, which still more offended Northumberland, who, by the laws of war which then prevailed, had the sole right to their ransom. Enraged at the prohibition, he made an *alliance with Douglas*, and entered into correspondence

with Glendower, purposing, by uniting their forces with his own, to dethrone Henry, and advance the true heir to the crown.

77. When preparations had been made, Northumberland was seized with sudden illness at Berwick, and his son, surnamed Hotspur, taking the command of the troops, marched to Shrewsbury, to meet Glendower, who had advanced with his forces to Shropshire. Henry got intelligence of their designs, and, having a small army in readiness, he hurried to Shrewsbury to give battle before the Welsh had joined them. The armies were nearly equal, as was also the bravery of the commanders. Henry was to be found in the thickest of the battle, and his gallant son, even when wounded in the face with an arrow, would not quit the field. Percy and Douglas performed incredible feats of valour; till the battle was decided by the death of Percy. The earls of Worcester and Douglas were taken prisoners; the former was beheaded; and the latter treated with the respect due to his rank. Northumberland had, on his recovery, raised an army to join his son; but hearing of the defeat, he dismissed his forces, and apologised to the king, who pardoned him, and all the other rebels, with the exception of the earl of Worcester and Sir Richard Vernon.

78. Northumberland again conspired with the earl of Nottingham, and the archbishop of York: the two latter were executed. This was the first instance of a dignified churchman being put to death by the civil power. Northumberland fled to Scotland; but returning soon after, in hopes of raising the people to arms, was slain in battle at Bramham. This event, and the death of Glendower, which happened soon after, freed Henry from his domestic enemies; and about the same time he obtained an advantage over Scotland, by the capture of a vessel, in which was prince James, only surviving son of Robert III., who was on his way to France, to avoid the danger with which he was threatened by the ambition of his uncle, the duke of Albany. The young prince was carried to

London, and though a truce subsisted between England and Scotland, Henry refused to liberate him. Robert was unable to bear the shock of this event, and died soon after, leaving the government in the hands of the duke of Albany.

79. Though Henry showed a want of generosity in detaining James in England, he made some amends, by giving him an education which qualified him, when he came to the throne, to improve, in some degree, the rude manners of his subjects. Henry became, in his latter years, jealous of his son, and excluded him from any share in public business: he was even displeased to see him at the head of an army, fearing that his martial talents might prove dangerous to his own authority.

80. The young prince, thus restrained from his proper employments, broke out into extravagances and follies of every kind, and associated with low and profligate companions; one of these had been indicted before Sir William Gascoigne, the Chief Justice, for some misdemeanour. The prince appeared with him at the bar, to give his countenance and protection; and was so enraged at the issue of the trial, as to strike the Justice on the bench. Sir William, mindful of the respect due to his office, ordered the prince to be committed to prison; to which Henry, conscious of his fault, readily submitted. The king, on being informed of the transaction, exclaimed, "Happy the king who has so faithful a magistrate; still more happy in having a son so submissive to the laws!" Henry, whose health had been for some time declining, died at Westminster, 14th March, 1413, aged forty-six, having reigned thirteen years.

81. Henry soon lost the popularity he had enjoyed before obtaining the crown, and he governed more by terror than affection. His situation, disturbed by rebellions, and haunted by remorse, after he had attained the height of his ambition, rendered him an object of pity; but, though his usurpation was unjustifiable, his prudence and firmness *rendered it at the time* advantageous to the English na-

tion. While a subject, he was supposed to have imbibed the principles of his father, the duke of Lancaster, who was Wickliffe's chief supporter; but when king, he did not hesitate to sacrifice principle to interest; and, to gain the favour of the church, he procured an Act of Parliament for the burning of heretics, or those who differed from the church of Rome. William Sawtre, rector of St Oswyth, was the first who suffered. The savage spirit of revenge which prevailed at this time, appears from an act which made it felony to cut out a person's tongue, or to put out his eyes,—crimes which were then not uncommon.

1413.]

HENRY V.

[1422.

82. Was crowned at Westminster, 9th April, 1413. Immediately on his accession, he called together his former companions, informed them of the reformation he intended to commence in his own conduct, and prohibited them from appearing in his presence, till they showed a disposition to imitate his example. Those who had checked his former conduct, now received the highest marks of favour; the Chief Justice, in particular, was commended, and exhorted to persevere in the impartial execution of the laws. He anxiously endeavoured to make amends to those who had suffered under his father's government; he expressed the deepest sorrow for the fate of Richard, caused his funeral obsequies to be performed with solemnity and splendour, and showed kindness to those who had been faithful to their unfortunate king.

83. Instead of continuing the restraint imposed on the earl of March, he received him with particular favour; and this competitor for the crown, became warmly attached to him, and gave no disturbance to his government. The family of Percy was restored to their estates and titles. Merit was encouraged and rewarded, and the defects of his title to the crown were forgot, in the attachment universally felt towards him.

84. The persecution of the Lollards, in the former

reign, had encreased, instead of diminishing their number, and more severe acts were now passed against them :—not only their lives, but their property was to be forfeited and all magistrates were obliged, by oath, to use the endeavours for the extirpation of the heresy. Lord Cobham was one of the most distinguished of the sect, and : such particularly obnoxious to the clergy. Henry had high regard for this nobleman, and endeavoured to induce him to retract his opinions ; but, finding him inflexible he withdrew all interference, and Cobham was condemned to the flames by the Archbishop of Canterbury. He was confined in the Tower, from which he made his escape before the day appointed for his execution. The conspiracy of the Lollards was detected, and many of them seized and executed. Cobham fled ; but four years after was apprehended, and hanged as a traitor, and his body afterwards burned as a heretic. This enterprize which was aggravated by the clergy, brought discredit on the sect, and checked its progress.

85. To divert the minds of the people from such scenes Henry determined to make war on France. His inclination to this step was seconded by his father's dying injunction ; and, to furnish a pretext for the intended invasion, he demanded the restoration of the French provinces taken from the English ; which being refused, he landed at Harfleur, with an army of 30,000, in 1415. He besieged and took Harfleur ; but the unusual heat of the season with the fatigues of the siege, had wasted his army, and he was obliged to think of returning to England.

86. Before he could reach a place of safety, a numerous French army had been assembled in Normandy to intercept his passage over the Somme, and Henry offered to sacrifice his conquest of Harfleur, for a safe passage to Calais. This proposal was rejected ; and, harassed by the enemy, and his army languishing from sickness and want of provisions, his affairs seemed in a desperate condition, when he was so fortunate as to seize a ford near *St Quentin*, not sufficiently guarded, and his army pass-

in safety. He was proceeding to Calais, and had passed the river Ternois, when the whole of the French army appeared posted in the plains of Agincourt, in such a way as made it impossible to avoid coming to an engagement. The situation of Henry was now precisely similar to that of Edward III. at Cressy, and of the Black Prince at Poitiers, and the remembrance of the victories then obtained, inspired them with hope on the present occasion.

87. Henry employed the night in making preparation for battle, while the enemy spent it in festivity, in vain confidence of success from their superior numbers. In the morning, Henry engaged with his army in devotional exercises, and then patiently awaited the approach of the enemy. The English archers threw the French army into confusion at the beginning of the combat, their cavalry was obstructed by the clayey soil, and the field was soon covered with slain and wounded. After all opposition from the enemy was over, the English pursued, and made prisoners about 14,000. This battle, which was fought October 25, 1415, proved very disastrous to the French, from the great number of nobility slain and made prisoners. The French had 10,000 killed; the loss of the English did not amount to eighty.

88. Henry took his prisoners to Calais, and thence to England, and, having made a truce with France, the English did not appear there again for two years. During this interval, France was involved in the horrors of civil war; and Henry met with no opposition on his return. The treaty of Troyes was made; by which Charles was to retain his dignity for life, and Henry was to marry his daughter Catherine, and succeed to the crown. Henry went to England soon after his marriage, but the dauphin opposed the treaty, and assumed the title of Regent, which obliged Henry to return with an army, and he was received in Paris with every expression of joy. The dauphin was soon compelled to yield: success attended Henry's enterprises, and the birth of a son, named after

him, was celebrated by rejoicings as great in Paris as in England, the infant being regarded as the heir of both monarchies. But his glory was terminated by death, on the 31st August, 1422, in the thirty-fourth year of his age, and tenth of his reign. Feeling his end approaching, he called his brother, the duke of Bedford, and some noblemen in whom he confided; and with great tranquillity expressed his wishes with regard to his family and kingdom, entreating them to continue to his son the attachment they had always shown to himself. The abilities of Henry were displayed in the cabinet as well as in the field; he had the rare talent of attaching his friends, and of gaining his enemies; and his conduct at all times evinced his regard for the welfare of his people. Catherine, his widow, married Sir Owen Tudor, a Welsh gentleman; which family, thus raised to distinction, afterwards ascended the throne of England.

1422.]

HENRY VI.,

[1461.

89. While yet an infant, was proclaimed king of England and France. The duke of Bedford was appointed Protector, an office for which his prudence and experience well qualified him. At this time, the English were masters of almost the whole of France; but, notwithstanding the utmost exertions of Bedford, the dauphin gained ground. The possession of the city of Orleans was considered, from its situation, an object of importance. The earl of Salisbury was appointed to besiege it; while the French used every effort to supply the city with whatever was necessary for resistance. Many skirmishes took place under the walls; bold sallies were made, and repulsed with equal boldness. Scarcity was now felt in the garrison; and the city being closely invested by the English, Charles, in despair, would have retired from the contest; but for the advice of his queen, Mary of Anjou; and another female, soon after effected the deliverance of the French in a very unexpected manner. This was the celebrated Joan d'Arc, a country girl, of twenty-seven *years of age*, and servant at a small inn.

90. The state of France, and the situation of the young king, expelled from his throne, and now, seemingly, reduced to the last extremity, naturally formed the subject of conversation, and excited the feelings of all ranks. Joan was seized with a wild desire to avenge her country, and serve her king, which she brooded over, till she fancied herself destined by Heaven to accomplish this great object. She procured admission to the king, and promised, in the name of God, to raise the siege of Orleans, and to conduct him to Rheims to be crowned. To satisfy his doubts, she revealed (as was pretended) secrets unknown to all but himself, and described a sword which had long lain neglected in the church of St Catherine, of Fierbois, and which she demanded as the instrument of her future victories. An account of these transactions was circulated, which revived their drooping hopes, and she was received by her countrymen as their guardian angel. The English commanders, whom she had threatened with Divine vengeance, if they refused to raise the siege and evacuate France, affected to treat her interference with derision; but the same superstitious belief in her supernatural influence, which inspired the French with new courage, deprived the English of the power of resistance. Joan entered the city, displaying a consecrated banner, and promising her followers the assistance of Heaven, urged them to attack the English in their entrenchments. At one time the French were repulsed, and Joan, left almost alone, was obliged to retreat; but displaying her standard, and encouraging them by her exhortations, she led them back to the charge, and the English were overpowered. In another attack she was wounded in the neck with an arrow: she retreated for a moment, pulled out the arrow with her own hands, and hastened back to head the troops. The wonted courage of the English had given place to despair, and it was in vain for the generals to attempt to rouse the intimidated troops. The siege was raised on the 8th May, and nothing thought of but making a safe retreat. They were over-

taken by the French on the 18th June, at the village of Patay; the English were discomfited, and fled; 2,000 were killed, and many taken prisoners.

91. One part of Joan's promise had now been made good, and she insisted that Charles should immediately set out for Rheims, to have the other fulfilled. A few weeks before, this would have appeared a ridiculous proposal; Rheims was in the hands of a victorious enemy, and the road leading to it occupied by their garrisons. Availing himself of the present consternation of the English, Charles set out, at the head of twelve thousand men. Troyes and Chalons opened their gates to him, and it could scarcely be perceived that he passed through an enemy's country. He was crowned at Rheims; the maid of Orleans standing by his side in complete armour. Many towns and fortresses immediately after this submitted; and the whole nation seemed disposed to show their affection for him.

92. Bedford had now an opportunity of displaying his extraordinary skill and prudence. He attempted to restore the courage of his troops, by facing the enemy, while he cautiously selected situations which made it impossible for Charles to attack them. Joan wished, after the coronation of Charles, to return to her former station; but was urged by the count Dunois, (who was sensible of the advantage of her presence among the troops), to remain till the English were entirely expelled. She accordingly went to Compeigne, at that time besieged by the duke of Burgundy. A sally was made, in which she exhibited the utmost valour; but being deserted by her friends, (who, it was thought, envied her renown, and willingly exposed her,) she was taken prisoner, and sold to the duke of Bedford, who, by a barbarous revenge or policy, had her arraigned, condemned, and burned for witchcraft, in the market-place of Rouen. This cruel execution proved the reverse of advantageous to the English, by strengthening the inclination then shown by the French to return to their rightful king; and the duke of

Burgundy having united with the French, the power of the English rapidly decayed. Bedford died at Rouen, in 1435. The factions which prevailed in England prevented proper measures from being adopted to retrieve their affairs, and the English were exposed for seven months, in an enemy's country, before a successor was appointed to the duke of Bedford.

93. Henry being now in his twenty-third year, a marriage was negotiated for him with Margaret of Anjou, a woman of masculine spirit, and solid understanding,—qualities which seemed to fit her for supplying the defects and weakness of her husband's character. The queen attached herself to the party that opposed the duke of Gloucester; and his ruin was resolved on. His duchess, daughter of Lord Cobham, was maliciously accused of witchcraft, and condemned to do public penance, and suffer perpetual imprisonment. Gloucester was greatly beloved by the people; and this cruel treatment, showing the malice of his enemies, encreased their regard and affection to him so much, that Winchester and his party determined to destroy a man whose popularity and resentment might prove so dangerous to them. He was accused of treason, and thrown into prison, where in a few days he was found dead; no doubt being entertained that he had fallen victim to the vengeance of his enemies. This prince had received a superior education, and was a great patron of learned men: he was the first who established public libraries in England. The cardinal of Winchester died six weeks after the murder of Gloucester, his nephew, for his concern in which, it was said, he suffered great remorse in his last moments.

94. Suffolk had secretly promised, in the marriage-treaty of Margaret, that the province of Maine should be yielded to the duke of Anjou, Margaret's uncle; and, on the death of Gloucester, the court of France insisted on the performance of that part of the treaty. The governor was obliged to surrender to the French army, under count Dunois; and thus all that province was alienated from the crown of England.

95. Charles renewed hostilities in 1449; and, with four armies, invaded Normandy. All the towns opened their gates, as soon as the French appeared. The duke of Somerset retired into Rouen, with the few troops of which he was master; but Charles, at the head of a formidable army, presented himself before the gates, and the inhabitants called aloud for a capitulation. Somerset was obliged to surrender, and purchase a retreat to Harfleur, by payment of 56,000 crowns, and the cession of all the towns in Upper Normandy. Assistance at last came from England, but only amounted to 4000 men, who landed at Cherbourg, and were soon put to rout, by the count of Clermont; and this battle or skirmish was the only one fought by the English, in defence of their dominions in France, which had cost them so much to obtain. Similar success attended the French army in Guienne; which, after having been subject to England for three centuries, became now part of the French dominions. Though no treaty was made, the English being obliged to leave France, the war was in a manner at an end,—a war which, while it deprived the English of their former possessions in France, left them nothing but the fame of the splendid victories of Cressy, Poitiers, and Agincourt.

96. The arbitrary conduct of the queen and Suffolk excited great discontent in the nation, who attributed to his interference the loss of their French territories; and the murder of the duke of Gloucester encreased their indignation against him. This, and the king's weakness, induced Richard, duke of York, to aspire to the crown. He was descended from Lionel, second son of Edward III.; his title therefore was preferable to Henry's, who was descended from John, Edward's third son; and, in the bloody contest that ensued, the nation suffered for their turbulence under Richard II., and for having then, without any just reason, broke the lineal succession to the throne. Richard was a dangerous rival, not only from *own* title, but from the esteem with which he was

regarded by the people, and also by being closely connected with the most powerful of the nobility. Suffolk, to escape from the odium which his actions had incurred, consented to banishment for five years. He was intercepted by his enemies on his way to France, his head struck off, and his body thrown into the sea. The duke of Somerset succeeded Suffolk; but, as it was under his government that the French provinces were lost, he was equally obnoxious to the people.

97. Public discontent appeared in various insurrections: the one that broke out in Kent was the most serious. John Cade, a native of Ireland, who had been obliged to leave the country for crime, took, on his return, the name of Mortimer, intending to pass for a son of Sir John Mortimer, the last of the family of Marche, to whom the crown of right belonged, and who had been executed in the beginning of this reign, on a charge of treason. At the mention of that popular name, about 20,000 of the lower classes flocked around Cade; who excited them, by complaints against government. A small party sent against the rioters was defeated near Sevenoaks, and Cade advanced to London. He sent a list of grievances to the court, and promised to lay down arms on their being redressed; and on Say, the treasurer, and Cromer, sheriff of Kent, being punished for malversation. The king was removed for safety to Kenilworth, and the city gates were opened to Cade; who, for a time preserved discipline among his followers; but having, to gratify them, put Say and Cromer to death, without trial, he could no longer restrain their violence. The citizens were alarmed; and, with the assistance of a detachment sent by lord Scales, they repulsed the rebels with great slaughter. On a promise of pardon they retreated towards Rochester: a price was put on Cade's head, who was killed by a gentleman of Suffolk, and many of his followers were capitally punished.

98. In 1452 the duke of York advanced to London, with an army of 10,000, demanding reformation of the

government, and the dismissal of Somerset. Finding the gates of the city shut against him, he retreated to York, where he was followed by the king, at the head of a superior army. A parley ensued: Richard still insisted on the removal of Somerset, to which the court seemed to assent; and the duke, unwilling to use violence to obtain the crown, retired to his seat on the borders of Wales. The birth of a prince, on the 13th of October, who received the name of Edward, was considered no joyful event, as it removed the hopes of a peaceable succession to the duke of York, and prolonged the quarrel between the parties.

99. The king was at this time seized with a malady which prevented him from exercising even the appearance of royalty. Richard was appointed Lieutenant, and afterwards Protector of the kingdom; and Somerset was sent to the Tower. Instead of stepping into the throne, which he might now have done, Richard accepted the government as a trust, and thus enabled Henry, who soon recovered, to resume the royal power. He was advised by Richard's enemies, to annul the Protectorship, to release Somerset, and to commit into his hands the administration. Richard on this levied an army, but, without advancing any claims to the crown, he merely complained of the king's ministers, and insisted on reformation. A battle was fought at St Alban's, 25th May 1455, in which, without sustaining any material loss, the Yorkists slew about 5000 of their opponents, among whom were many persons of distinction. The king fell into the hands of Richard, who treated him with respect and tenderness, requiring him only (which he considered no hardship) to give up to his rival the authority of the crown. This was the first blood shed in that fatal contest, during which, in the course of thirty years, twelve battles were fought, in which the ancient nobility of England were almost annihilated.

100. Parliament again made Richard Protector, but limited his continuance in that office to the majority of *Prince Edward*. The queen contrived to make her power

a balance to the authority of Richard; and, taking opportunity of his absence, she induced the king to declare his intention of resuming the government, and putting an end to Richard's authority. The battle of Bloreheath was fought on the 23d Sept. 1459, and that of Northampton, 10th July 1460; in both of which the Yorkists were successful. In the latter, the king was again taken prisoner.

101. Parliament now decreed, that while Henry should retain the title of king, the royal authority should remain with Richard; and that he should be acknowledged the true heir, and lawful successor to the crown. Margaret, after the battle at Northampton, had fled with her infant son to Durham, and thence to Scotland; but returning soon, she applied to the northern barons for assistance. Her helpless situation excited their compassion, and an army of 20,000 was quickly collected. The duke of York hastened to meet her with a body of 5000 men: the inequality of numbers was sufficient to decide the victory; the battle of Wakefield was fought, in which the duke was killed; and his head was, by Margaret's orders, fixed on the gates of York, with a paper crown, in derision of his professed title.

102. His son, the earl of Rutland, was murdered by Clifford, in revenge of his father's death, who had fallen in the battle of St Alban's. The battle of Mortimer's Cross followed, in which Margaret was defeated: but she was successful against Warwick in the second battle of St Alban's, and the king's party got possession of his person. The queen derived no great advantage from this victory. Young Edward, who was not inclined to observe the same moderation that his father had done, assembled an army in St John's fields,—crowds of persons collected, and in a harangue, proving the title of Edward, they were asked, whether they would have Henry of Lancaster, or Edward, for their king. They made choice of the latter, with loud acclamations. The bishops, nobles, and persons of distinction were next assembled at Baynard's

castle. They ratified the election, and the new king was proclaimed on the 9th March, 1461, by the title of Edward IV. Thus ended the reign of Henry VI., who, while an infant, was proclaimed king of England and France, and who began life with prospects more splendid than any other prince in Europe.

103. The first instance of debt contracted on parliamentary security occurs in this reign. A law was also passed for the due election of members of parliament; great disorders having been occasioned by the multitude of electors. Permission was given to export corn when it was at low prices. The manners of the people became fierce and barbarous, from the violent contentions which prevailed so long. Henry founded Eton college; and King's college, Cambridge.

1461]

EDWARD IV.,

[1483.

104. Now in his twentieth year, was of a bold, enterprising temper; and a circumstance that occurred in the commencement of his reign showed his sanguinary disposition. A tradesman of London, whose shop had the sign of the crown, had said, that he would make his son heir to the crown. For this harmless pleasantry, which was interpreted as spoken in derision of Edward's assumed title, the poor man was condemned, and executed.

105. Margaret had retired northwards, and was soon again at the head of a large army. The king and the earl of Warwick hastened to meet her, and a bloody battle took place, March 29th, at Towton, Yorkshire, in which Margaret was defeated, and fled to Scotland, with Henry and Prince Edward. She found the Scotch as much divided by faction, as those she had left. James III. was a minor, and it was not till she had offered to deliver up the important fortress of Berwick, and to contract her son with the king's sister, that she received any promise of assistance. She then went to France; and promising to give up Calais, if her family should be restored to the throne, Louis XI., who had succeeded Charles in 1460, *was induced to send along with her 2000 men, which,*

with a numerous train of adventurers from Scotland, enabled her to take the field. The king's troops attacked them at Hexham, and obtained a complete victory on the 15th May. Margaret, flying with her son to a forest for concealment, was beset by robbers, who seized her jewels; but, while they quarreled about the division of the spoil, she escaped from them. When almost sinking with hunger and fatigue, a robber approached her with a drawn sword. She suddenly determined to trust to his generosity; and, advancing, she presented to him the prince, saying, "Here, my friend, I commit to your care your king's son." The man, struck with the event, and pleased with the confidence reposed in him, concealed them till he got them conducted to the coast, and they escaped to Flanders. Henry remained in concealment a year in Lancashire; but was at length given up to Edward, and thrown into the Tower.

106. The kingdom now enjoyed a short interval of peace; and Edward, to insure the friendship of France, sent Warwick over to negotiate a marriage for him with the queen's sister; but, during his absence, Edward privately married lady Elisabeth Gray, daughter of Jacqueline of Luxembourg, by a second marriage, and widow of Sir John Gray, who had been slain in the second battle of St Alban's. Warwick, whose proposals from the king had been accepted, was highly indignant at his conduct, and still more so at perceiving that his credit with Edward, which he thought his services merited, was lost by the influence of the queen, who procured for her own relatives all marks of royal favour. A conspiracy was formed against Edward, and the Lancastrians prevailed at the battle of Banbury.

107. Another rebellion broke out in Lincolnshire, in 1470, and the king defeated the rebels in the battle of Stamford, 13th March. Warwick and the duke of Clarence, who had joined in the rebellion, fled to France, and were received with great kindness by the king, who sent for Queen Margaret, and an agreement was made, that

Warwick, formerly the enemy of the Lancastrian faction, should become their head, and attempt to re-establish Henry on the throne. Prince Edward was, at that time, united to Warwick's second daughter. Warwick landed at Dartmouth, in September 1470, (while the king was engaged suppressing an insurrection in the North,) and such was his popularity, and the general discontent, that, in a few days, his army amounted to 60,000. The king hastened to encounter him; but, being informed by lord Hastings of his danger from concealed enemies, he escaped to Lynne, with a small retinue, and embarked for Holland, leaving Warwick entire master of the kingdom, within eleven days of his landing. He hastened to London, took Henry from the confinement in which he had been the chief means of placing him, and had him solemnly re-proclaimed king. Edward's adherents fled beyond sea, or took refuge in sanctuaries. In London alone, 2000 were saved in this manner, among whom was Edward's Queen, who there gave birth to a son, named after his father. Edward, with the secret assistance of the duke of Burgundy, landed at Ravenspur on the 25th March, 1471. His partisans flocked around, and Warwick assembled an army at Leicester, with the intention of giving battle; but Edward, by another road, arrived at the gates of London. Here he had many friends; and on the 11th April he got admission into the city, and Henry again fell into the hands of his enemies. Warwick, who was posted at Barnet, was deserted by Clarence, his son-in-law, though bound by every tie of honour and gratitude to have been faithful to him; and, as Warwick rejected the offers of peace made him by Edward and Clarence, a battle ensued, which was fought April 14th, with great obstinacy on both sides. Warwick was slain, and the victory at last decided in Edward's favour.

108. Queen Margaret, and her son, now eighteen years of age, landed on the same day at Weymouth, with a small body of French troops. On hearing of her husband's captivity, and the defeat and death of Warwick, her courage,

which had so often supported, now failed her. She took sanctuary in the abbey of Beaulieu, till being encouraged by the earls of Pembroke and Devonshire, and other noblemen, still to hope for success, she advanced through Devon, Somerset, and Gloucester, encreasing her army every day; but, being overtaken by Edward at Tewkesbury, the Lancastrians were totally defeated on the 4th May. Queen Margaret and her son were taken prisoners, and brought to Edward, who asked the prince how he dared to invade his dominions; and, on answering, that he came to claim his just inheritance, Edward struck him on the face with his gauntlet, on which the duke of Clarence, and some others, hurried him to another apartment, and there dispatched him. Margaret was taken to the Tower, where her husband had died a few days after the battle of Tewkesbury;—whether by a violent or natural death was uncertain: thus the hopes of the house of Lancaster seemed utterly extinguished.

109. Edward now, freed from his enemies, gave himself up to indolence and vain amusements, till he was roused by the prospect of foreign conquests; and went over to Calais in 1475, having leagued with the duke of Burgundy against France. He was attended by 1500 men at arms, and 15,000 archers. Louis, earnestly desirous of peace, concluded a truce more advantageous than honourable for him. * He agreed to pay 75,000 crowns immediately, if Edward's troops were withdrawn, and 50,000 crowns yearly, during their joint lives; and that the dauphin, when of age, should marry Edward's eldest daughter. The two monarchs met to ratify the treaty, at Pequigny, near Amiens: a close rail was drawn across a bridge, Edward and Louis came to the opposite sides, and having conferred together, and interchanged mutual civilities, they parted. The most honourable part of Louis' treaty, was his stipulating to pay 50,000 crowns for Margaret's ransom; and that princess, who had experienced such vicissitudes of fortune, passed the rest of her life in peaceful retirement. She died in 1482.

110. The duke of Clarence had never been able to regain the friendship of the king, and had also displeased the queen and the duke of Gloucester, who combined to procure his death. Some of his friends were exposed to an iniquitous and barbarous persecution;—one, a clergyman, more learned than was then usual, in mathematics and astronomy, was accused of necromancy, condemned, put to the torture, and executed. Clarence maintained the innocence of his friends, and exclaimed against their persecutors; and the king, offended at the freedom he used, committed him to the Tower, January 16th, 1478. He was then accused of arraigning public justice, and pronounced guilty by both houses of Parliament,—another instance of the servility of those bodies in that age, strangely contrasting with the independence they frequently displayed, in refusing the most necessary supplies for the support of government. The only favour the king granted his brother, was the choice of the manner of his death; and he was drowned in the Tower in a butt of malmsey.

111. The duke of Gloucester entered Scotland with an army, and obliged the Scots to restore Berwick to Edward. This success inclined Edward to think seriously of a war with France; but, while making preparations, he was seized with an illness, which terminated his life, on April 9th, 1483, in the forty-second year of his age, and twenty-third of his reign.

112. In this reign, the importation of all articles manufactured in England was strictly prohibited. Printing was introduced by William Caxton. During this reign, England was twice visited by the plague, which carried off great numbers.

1483.]

EDWARD V.,

[1483.]

113. Eldest son of Edward IV., was born in 1470, and succeeded his father in 1483, his uncle, the duke of Gloucester, being appointed Protector;—an office for which his talents well fitted him; but it was not long till

his ambition made him aspire to the throne. Having got possession of the young king, he induced the queen to give up to his charge the duke of York, the king's brother; and, having put to death the earl of Rivers, lord Hastings, and others, friendly to the young princes, he spread reports of their illegitimacy; and, with the assistance of the duke of Buckingham and the Mayor of London, contrived to get himself proclaimed king. Richard pretended to accept the crown with reluctance, and was crowned on the 27th June, by the title of

1483.]

RICHARD III.

[1485.

114. To secure his ill-gotten power, he resolved on the destruction of his nephews, and they were smothered in bed, and privately buried in the Tower. Their bones were discovered in the reign of Charles II., and removed to Westminster Abbey, where a monument is erected to their memory.

115. Buckingham could not be easily recompensed for his exertions in placing Richard on the throne; and being disgusted at the refusal of some demand, he conspired with some of the Yorkists who desired to avenge the death of the young princes, and transfer the crown to Henry, earl of Richmond, grandson of Catherine, widow of Henry V., and Sir Owen Tudor. Richard, having become suspicious of Buckingham's designs, offered a large reward for his apprehension. Being thus reduced to extremities, he took up arms in Wales, and gave the signal for a general insurrection in England; but at this time there fell such heavy and incessant rains, as occasioned an inundation of the Severn, by which many lost their lives. Buckingham was by this means prevented from marching to join his associates; the Welsh deserted him, through superstition at so extraordinary an event; and having taken shelter in the house of Bannister, an old servant of his family, he was betrayed into the hands of Richard, at Salisbury, and immediately executed.

116. Richard's next plan to secure the crown, was to

marry the princess Elisabeth, and so eager was the queen-dowager to regain authority, that she made no scruple to the alliance with the murderer of her sons. But the crimes of Richard were so shocking, that all were desirous of wresting the sceptre from his hands; and Richmond was urged to hasten over, and prevent his marriage with the princess Elisabeth. He accordingly set sail from Harfleur, with a small army, and landed without opposition, at Milford-haven, 7th August. Richard was then at Nottingham. The duke of Norfolk was almost the only nobleman attached to his cause: many who professed loyalty only waited an opportunity to betray him.

117. The two rivals met at Bosworth, near Leicester; —Richmond with an army of 6000, and Richard with one double that number. Lord Stanley, who had the command of 7000 men, declared for Richmond soon after the battle began, which filled Richard's soldiers with dismay. Richard, aware of his desperate situation, rushed into the thickest of the battle, in hopes that Richmond's death or his own would decide the victory. Richmond did not decline the combat, but Richard, when within reach of his adversary, was surrounded and overwhelmed by numbers. Thus perished this bloody usurper, after a reign of little more than two years, and with him ended the line of the Plantagenets, who had swayed the sceptre for 330 years. His body was found in the field, besmeared with blood, was thrown carelessly over a horse, and carried to Leicester, where it was interred amidst the shouts of the populace. The battle of Bosworth was the last fought by the rival parties of York and Lancaster.

1485.]

HENRY VII.,

[1509.

118. Earl of Richmond, was born in Pembroke castle, 1455, and proclaimed king on the field of battle, 22d August, 1485. A crown which had been worn by Richard in battle, was found among the spoils, and was placed on his head, the whole army exclaiming, "Long live king Henry!"

119. He then advanced to the capital by slow journeys, and was joyfully received; but his coronation was delayed by the prevalence of a malady, hitherto unknown, called the "Sweating Sickness," which suddenly carried off multitudes. In a few weeks the fury of the pestilence abated, and the coronation was performed with great pomp on the 30th October, by the Archbishop of Canterbury. His marriage with Elisabeth, daughter of Edward IV., which took place in January 1486, gave general satisfaction; as, by the union of the houses of York and Lancaster, it was hoped the dissensions which had so long desolated the kingdom, would be terminated. The king's severity towards the house of York, which had always been most beloved by the people, particularly the imprisonment of the young earl of Warwick, made him unpopular, notwithstanding his wise and prudent administration. An insurrection was raised against him, by Sir Humphrey Stafford and others; the city of Worcester was besieged; but Henry succeeded in quelling the insurrection without coming to an engagement. Sir Humphrey was executed at Tyburn. Lovel, another of the leaders, escaped to Flanders, and the rest were pardoned. Soon after this, the nation was gratified by the birth of a prince, who was named Arthur.

120. Henry's government was again disturbed by the rash enterprise of one Simon, a priest in Oxford. He first instructed Lambert Simnel, the son of a baker, to personate the duke of York, youngest son of Edward IV., who, it was reported, had escaped the cruelty of Richard, and was still alive. But a new report having arisen that Warwick had escaped from the Tower, which was received with satisfaction, he changed his plan, and made Simnel personate that unfortunate prince. It was suspected that the queen-dowager was concerned in the plot, as the youth had more information of many circumstances connected with the royal family than he could have received from Simon. As the Irish were much attached to the house of York, that island was made the first scene of the enterprise. Simnel presented himself, and the story

was believed by all ranks. The pretended prince lodged in the castle, and proclaimed king by the title Edward VI.

121. On receiving this intelligence, Henry, who expected the queen-dowager, placed her in close confinement in Bermondsey, where she continued, notwithstanding her remonstrances, till her death, some years after. He then ordered Warwick to be conducted through the streets of London, to St Paul's cross, where he assembled to see him. Meanwhile, Simnel prepared to invade England with a body of troops, commanded by the earl of Lincoln, who had gone over from Flanders, where he had resided with his aunt, the duchess of Burgundy to assist in the conspiracy. Henry prepared for defence, levied troops in different parts of the kingdom, and being informed that Simnel had landed in Lancashire, he advanced with his forces to Coventry. The rebels had expected to be joined by the disaffected in the North, but they, convinced of the imposture, and restrained by the king's reputation, aided the royal army. The rebels, thus disappointed, determined to bring the matter to a speedy conclusion; and the king not declining combat, the hostile armies met at Stoke on the 16th June. The leaders of the rebels being determined to conquer or perish, and the German veterans (furnished by the duchess of Burgundy,) being experienced soldiers, victory was long doubtful, but was at last decided in favour of the king. Simnel, with his tutor, Simon, taken prisoner. Simon being a priest, was not tried, but closely confined, and Simnel, too contemptible to be the object of resentment, was made scullion in the king's kitchen, and afterwards advanced to be a falconer. A severe inquiry was now made as to who had assisted the rebels, and Henry made their punishment subservient to his policy, by imposing heavy fines. Having thus gratified his rigour, he determined to satisfy the people by the queen's coronation, which had been still delayed, though she had been nearly two years married.

122. The counties of Durham and York had always been averse to Henry's government, and now resisted his commissioners in levying a tax. The king, unwilling to yield to their discontent, and aware of the danger of such a precedent, ordered the earl of Northumberland, to assist the commissioners in enforcing payment. This so enraged them, that they attacked Northumberland, and put him to death, declared against the king, and prepared for resistance. The insurrection was quickly suppressed by the earl of Surrey. Achamber, the chief instigator, with several of his accomplices were executed, and Sir John Egremont, their leader, fled to Flanders. Henry now declared his intention to invade France; and on this pretence levied a *benevolence*, a species of taxation which had been abolished by an act of Richard III. The nobility, eager for military glory, borrowed large sums of money, or sold their estates, to enable them to appear in the field with greater splendour.

123. The king arrived at Calais on 6th October, 1492, with an army of 25,000 foot, and 1600 horse, under the command of the duke of Bedford, and the earl of Oxford; and, as if he had really intended to attempt the conquest of France, he immediately proceeded to besiege Boulogne. Secret negotiations, however, had been made for peace some months before, which was soon concluded by Charles agreeing to pay 745,000 crowns, partly for arrears of the pension due to Edward IV., and partly that he might be allowed the peaceable possession of Brittany, which he had annexed to his dominions by his marriage with the young duchess. He also stipulated to pay yearly to Henry, and his heirs, 25,000 crowns. Thus was Henry's ruling passion of avarice doubly gratified,—his subjects paying him for the war, and his enemies for the peace. His authority seemed fully established, his reputation for policy daily increased, and the hopes of pretenders to the throne, were cut off by his marriage, and the birth of a son; but the inveterate enemies he had raised to himself by his cruel treatment of the house of

York, determined to disturb, if they could not overthrow his government.

124. The duchess of Burgundy spread a rumour that her nephew the duke of York still lived; having heard that a youth named Perkin Warbeck, so called, a renegade Jew, bore a strong resemblance to Edward IV., she thought him a fit instrument for her enterprise. He took the name of Richard Plantagenet; and, with the aid of Simnel, made his appearance in Ireland, where he was soon supported by numbers of credulous people, whose admiration was excited by his elegant and courtly manners. All who were dissatisfied with the king, prepared to join him; but, when sanguine of success, they were frustrated by the desertion of Clifford, who betrayed their plans to the king, and having implicated Stanley, Lord Chamberlain, in their projects, the latter was brought to trial, and executed. This event filled the party of Warbeck with dismay. Finding it vain to attempt any thing in England, he repaired to Scotland, where he was cordially received by James IV., who believed the story so far as to give him in marriage the daughter of the earl of Huntly, a relation of his own. He even made an inroad on England, to attempt raising him to the throne; but seeing no prospect of success, he returned to Scotland.

125. Henry showed little anxiety to obtain reparation or revenge for this insult, but merely made it a text for renewing impositions on his subjects. The Welsh murmured at a tax occasioned by the inroad of the Scotch, from which they felt secure, and a large body advanced to petition the king against such grievances. Henry had an army ready to oppose the Scots, which he immediately ordered to march southward to suppress the insurrection. The rebels, sixteen thousand strong, had advanced to the gates of London, when the king had collected his forces. He put the enemy under guard, by a report that they would not be attacked for some days; but, on the same evening (22d Ju

began the action, by driving a detachment of the rebels from Deptford bridge; and, before the main body were prepared for resistance, they were surrounded by the king's troops, and made prisoners. Their leaders were executed; and as they had been inoffensive in their progress, and about two thousand had fallen in the field, the remainder were dismissed without punishment. During these commotions the Scottish king had besieged Norham castle, with a considerable army; but hearing that the earl of Surrey was advancing, he retreated, leaving the frontiers exposed to the English general, who besieged and took Ayton, a small castle, a few miles north of Berwick: but Henry, being no less desirous of peace than James, a truce was speedily concluded.

126. James had refused to deliver up Perkin, but privately desired him to leave the kingdom; and he retired to the wilds of Ireland. Impatient of this retreat, he embarked for Cornwall, and was quickly joined by three thousand of the populace. Elated with this success, he assumed, for the first time, the title of Richard IV., and came to Exeter, the gates of which were shut against him, and he prepared to besiege it; but being unprovided with every thing necessary for the attempt, and hearing that great preparations were making against him, he raised the siege, and retired to Taunton; with 7000 followers. Despairing of success, he secretly withdrew to the sanctuary of Beaulieu, his followers, the Cornish rebels, were again pardoned, and his wife, lady Catherine Gordon, was treated by Henry with great generosity. He assigned her an honourable station about the queen, and gave her a pension, which she enjoyed under his successor. Perkin, under promise of pardon, was persuaded to submit to the king; who conducted him in mock triumph to London, and required of him a confession of his life and adventures, which was made public. Being detained in custody, he escaped from his keepers, and was again pardoned; but was put in the stocks, and obliged to read publicly the confession he had made.

He was then confined in the Tower, where he entered into a correspondence with the earl of Warwick, to obtain liberty. This being detected, he was condemned, and hanged at Tyburn. The unfortunate earl of Warwick was soon after accused of raising insurrection, and executed, 21st November, 1499. Henry's severity to this unhappy youth occasioned much discontent; and left a great blemish on his character.

127. All the princes of Europe now sought alliance with Henry; and, in 1501, he had the satisfaction of completing a marriage with Arthur, prince of Wales, and Catherine of Arragon, fourth daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella. The young prince died 2d April, 1502; and Henry, desirous to continue the alliance with Spain, and unwilling to restore Catherine's dowry, compelled his second son Henry to be contracted to the Infanta. The same year, his eldest daughter Margaret was married to James IV. of Scotland. The queen died February 11th, 1503. She was deservedly beloved by the nation, whose affection was encreased on account of the harsh treatment she experienced from the king. Henry's avarice encreased with age; and he found two lawyers, Empson and Dudley, who seconded and enforced his tyrannical and rapacious measures. He possessed at his death the almost incredible sum of £1,800,000. Henry died of consumption at Richmond, 22d April, 1509, in the fifty-second year of his age, and twenty-fourth of his reign. His character was far from being amiable, and his conduct often unjust and oppressive; yet his reign was on the whole beneficial to the nation. He came to the throne when the people, tired of intestine convulsions, willingly supported his authority, rather than prolong the miseries of civil war; and, though he was himself guilty of many acts of extortion, he protected the people, by diminishing the exorbitant power of the nobility. For this purpose, he permitted the alienation of their estates, and prohibited the practice of engaging retainers, which had been carried to such a height, as to cause great disorders. There is

an instance of his severity against this abuse in his treatment of the earl of Oxford, his favourite general, who had entertained the king at his castle of Henningham; and to grace the departure of his royal guest, ordered his retainers to be drawn up in two lines. The king complimented the earl on the splendour of his entertainment, and on his numerous retinue of servants. The earl confessed they were most of them his retainers, come to do him service on that occasion. Then, said the king, my lord, I thank you for your good cheer, but I must not allow my laws to be broken in my sight: my attorney must speak with you. Oxford is said to have paid 15,000 merks, as a composition for this offence.

128. Henry was desirous of encouraging commerce, and even lent money, without interest, to merchants who had not stock sufficient to carry on their enterprises; yet some of the laws enacted were prejudicial to commerce, such as fixing the prices of articles manufactured, and the wages of labour; prohibiting the exportation of horses and money, and erecting corporations.

129. In 1509, the king ordered a ship of two decks to be built, which he called *The Great Harry*: it was a thousand tons burden, and cost £14,000. It may be reckoned the first of the English navy, as there was previously no other expedient, when a fleet was required, than hiring or pressing ships from merchants. The important discoveries of the East and West Indies, America, the Cape of Good Hope, and the island of Madagascar, were made during this reign. Henry had invited to London, in 1492, the discoverer of America; but Columbus had sailed under the patronage of Isabella of Castile, before receiving the invitation. In 1498 he fitted out Sebastian Cabot, a Venetian settled in Bristol, and sent him Westward. He discovered the main land of North America, about the sixtieth degree of North latitude; also Newfoundland, and other islands. About this time the study of ancient languages, and esteem for literature,

became fashionable; and the progress of improvement was greatly facilitated by the art of printing.

1509.]

HENRY VIII.,

[1547.]

130. Only surviving son of Henry VII., was eighteen years of age when he ascended the throne: he was handsome in person, and engaging in manners; and, as in him were united the rights of the houses of York and Lancaster, his accession gave general satisfaction. His kingdom was free from disquiet; his alliance was courted by foreign powers; his treasury was more than sufficient to answer any reasonable demand; and every thing seemed to promise a happy reign. He punished Empson and Dudley, the obnoxious ministers of the late king, and chose for his council persons more popular. His marriage with Catherine of Arragon, and the coronation of the king and queen, took place in June, 1509. In 1513 he engaged in a war with France; and in June went over himself to Calais, attended by the duke of Buckingham and other nobles. The English were at first repulsed, but were soon after victorious at Guinegast, the French cavalry taking to flight at the appearance of the English, on which account it was called the Battle of the Spurs. As the season advanced, Henry returned with his army to England, elated with his success, though in reality no advantage had been gained by the campaign, and much treasure expended. His success in the North was more decisive. The king of Scotland had crossed the Tweed, with an army of 50,000, and ravaged Northumberland. Meanwhile the earl of Surrey had marched to the defence of the country, with a force of 26,000; and approached the Scots near the Cheviot hills. The battle of Flodden was fought 9th September, in which king James and many of his chief nobility fell. Henry had now an opportunity of reducing Scotland to subjection; but, on the application of his sister, queen Margaret (who was appointed regent during the minority of her son,) he generously granted peace. In 1514 peace was concluded *also* with France; and, to cement the union between the

kingdoms, Henry gave his sister in marriage to Louis XII., who died January 1515, three months after.

131. Henry's prime minister and favourite, in the early part of his reign, was Cardinal Wolsey, the son of a private gentleman, or, as some say, of a butcher of Ipswich: he had the advantage of a learned education, and had been appointed one of the chaplains of Henry VII., who was so much pleased with his conduct, in a negotiation respecting his intended marriage with Margaret of Savoy, that he bestowed on him the bishoprick of Lincoln. He was a man of extraordinary capacity, and inordinate ambition; and having, by his assiduity in business, and insinuating manners, obtained great ascendancy over the king, he got possession of all situations of trust and emolument, as they became vacant. In addition to the archbishoprick of York, he obtained the sees of Durham and Winchester, besides receiving great part of the revenues of Bath, Worcester, and Hereford, which bishopricks were held by Italians, residing at Rome. The pope, to engage him in his interest, created him a cardinal; and no one ever supported with such splendour the dignity of that office, under pretence of procuring respect to religion. His household consisted of eight hundred servants, among whom were many knights and gentlemen. The sons of the nobility were placed in his family, for education, and to gain his favour. He liberally patronised literature, and gave encouragement to every branch of learning, both by his public institutions and private bounty. Besides his ecclesiastical preferments, he obtained the office of chancellor; and, in this situation, his administration of justice discovered a deep penetration of judgement, and enlarged knowledge of law and equity.

132. Francis I., dreading the encreasing power of Charles V., was desirous of obtaining the friendship of Henry; and, aware that it was necessary for this purpose to pay court to Wolsey, he dispatched admiral Bonnivet to London, with directions to employ all his address to obtain Wolsey's favour. In this he suc-

ceeded so well, that Wolsey, in a short time, agreed to second Francis' desire to recover Tournay. He represented to the king and council, that Tournay being distant from Calais, the possession of it was both useless and expensive to the English; which meeting with no opposition, a treaty was entered into for the ceding of Tournay. To give it a better appearance, it was agreed that the dauphin and the princess Mary, both infants, should be betrothed, and Tournay considered the dowry of the princess. Agreements of this kind were then common among sovereigns, though it was rare that the interests of the parties continued such as to render them effectual. As Henry had been at expense in building a citadel at Tournay, Francis agreed to pay 600,000 crowns at twelve annual payments, and Wolsey was promised 12,000 livres as an equivalent for its bishoprick.

133. Francis now redoubled his flatteries to induce Wolsey to negotiate for the delivery of Calais; but finding that the opinions of all were against this proposal, Wolsey did not proceed in the matter. In 1520 Francis solicited an interview with Henry near Calais; to which Henry, who was desirous of having a personal acquaintance with the French king, readily assented. The nobility of both nations vied with each other in pomp and show; and many of them, for the vain ostentation of appearing in splendour for a few days, involved themselves in penury for the rest of their lives.

134. While Henry was preparing to depart for Calais, he received an unexpected visit from the emperor Charles; who, fearing hostile intentions to his government, from the intended meeting of the two kings, had come in person to solicit Henry's friendship. He courted Wolsey's favour, by giving him hopes of attaining the papacy through his assistance; and this being the sole remaining object of Wolsey's ambition, he willingly devoted himself to the emperor's interests. Henry, instead of being offended at the court paid to his minister by such mighty *monarchs*, received it as homage to his own grandeur.

135. Henry proceeded to Calais with the queen and all his court, on May 30th, the day of Charles' departure; from that he went to Guisnes, a small town on the frontiers. Francis, attended in a similar manner, came to Ardres; and the first meeting of the kings was in a field between these towns, but within the English pale, in compliment to Henry for crossing the sea. Such magnificence was here displayed by both courts, that the place was called the *The Field of the Cloth of Gold*. A defiance had been sent to all the principal cities in Europe, that Henry and Francis with fourteen aids, would be ready to answer all comers who were gentlemen at tilt, tournament, or barriers. The two monarchs splendidly equipped, entered the field on horseback;—Henry, surrounded by the French; and Francis, by the English guards. Both were expert in every military exercise; and in such amusements, rather than in business, was the time of their mutual visit spent.

136. Henry then paid a visit, June 24th, to the emperor and Margaret of Savoy at Gravelines; and they returned with him to spend some days at Calais. Charles took this opportunity of securing the interest of Wolsey, by great promises and valuable gifts. He gave him possession of the revenues of the sees of Badajos, Placentia, and Castile.

137. Hostilities having broken out between the emperor and Francis, Henry, who had been appointed umpire, employed Wolsey to negotiate between them, along with the Pope's nuncio. On Francis' rejecting the unreasonable terms proposed, Wolsey went to Bruges, November 4th, where he was received by the emperor with the same state and respect as if he had been king. He concluded, in Henry's name, an offensive alliance with the Pope and the emperor, against France; stipulated that England should, the following summer, invade France with an army of 40,000 men; and betrothed to Charles, the princess Mary, then the only child of the king.

138. For some years, Europe had been agitated with

those religious controversies, which produced the Reformation. Pope Leo X., finding his treasury exhausted, had had recourse to the sale of indulgences; and Martin Luther, a professor in the university of Wirtemberg, began to preach against the abuses, which on this occasion were great, in the sale of indulgences. He proceeded to declaim against indulgences themselves; and finding his opinions hearkened to, he promulgated them by conference and writing, exposing other abuses and errors in the church of Rome. Saxony, Germany, all Europe heard of this innovation; and men, roused from their lethargy, began to call in question the most commonly received opinions. There were still remaining in England some of the Lollards, whose principles resembled those of Luther, and the new doctrines were readily received by the laity of all ranks. But Henry, who had been educated in strict attachment to the church of Rome, opposed Luther, and wrote in Latin against his principles. He sent a copy of the book to Leo, who received it with great respect, and bestowed on Henry the title of "Defender of the Faith," an appellation still retained by the kings of England. Luther soon published an answer, in which the public were inclined to give him the victory in the dispute; and the number of his followers daily encreased.

139. Leo, whose moderation and judgement might have retarded the progress of the reformation, died in 1521, and was succeeded by Adrian, who had been tutor to the emperor. Charles, dreading the resentment of Wolsey for being disappointed in obtaining the popedom, paid another visit to England, May 26th, and endeavoured to appease him by flattery and promise of future assistance; but, on the death of Adrian, soon after, Wolsey experienced a new disappointment in Clement VII. being elected to succeed. Concealing his displeasure, he congratulated Clement, who conferred on him for life the legantine powers, by which he possessed all the papal authority in England. Wolsey, in exercise of this power,

erected two colleges, one at Oxford, and one at Ipswich, and sought for learned men to fill the chairs, suppressing some of the smaller monasteries, to endow them. The Pope having been made captive at the sacking of Rome, 1527, Wolsey went over to concert measures for his release with Francis, and took this occasion to display his magnificence. Francis not only gave him power to liberate prisoners wherever he came, but went as far as Amiens to meet him.

140. Henry, after having been twenty years married to Catherine, now pretended to feel scruples about the lawfulness of the connection, she having been his brother's wife; and applied to the Pope to have the marriage annulled. To this he was induced by his desire to marry Anne Boleyn, daughter of Sir Thomas Boleyn, and granddaughter to the duke of Norfolk; whose beauty and accomplishments had so captivated him, that he designed to raise her to the throne. Wolsey was anxious to satisfy the king; but, delay being unavoidable in procuring the divorce, Henry was highly offended, and deprived him of the great seal, which was given to Sir Thomas More. Wolsey had made a present to Henry of the splendid palace of Hampton-court, which he had built; but he was now ordered to leave York palace, (Whitehall,) afterwards a residence of the kings of England; and all his plate and furniture were seized. He lived some time in retirement, deserted by all who had paid abject court to him in his prosperity. The king showed some marks of returning kindness; but Wolsey's enemies, who dreaded his return to favour, never ceased their complaints, till he was arraigned for high treason, and ordered to appear in London for trial. Thomas Cromwell, formerly a servant of the cardinal's, defended his unfortunate patron, with great spirit, which acquired for him the favour he afterwards had with the king. Wolsey was taken ill on his journey, and with difficulty reached Leicester Abbey, where he died, on the 28th September, 1530. A little before his death, he said to Sir William Kingston, who

had him in custody, "Had I but served God as diligently as I have served the king, he would not have given me up in my grey hairs; but this is the just reward I must receive for not regarding my service to God, but only to my prince. Let me advise you to take care what you put into the king's head; for you can never put it out again." Thus died the celebrated Cardinal Wolsey, whose history affords as striking an instance as is to be met with, of the instability of human greatness.

141. Henry had privately married Anne Boleyn, and she was crowned with all the pomp and dignity becoming the ceremony, November 14th, 1532; and, as the Pope still withheld his consent, Henry determined to show his disregard of the papal authority, and declared himself head of the church in his own dominions; which title was confirmed by parliament giving him entire spiritual jurisdiction, and right to all tithes and dues formerly paid to the church of Rome. This change, produced by the resentment of Henry, favoured the progress of the Reformation, though in a way neither foreseen nor intended by him; for, though he so far separated from the church of Rome, he prided himself on maintaining her doctrines; and, elated by the applause he had received, from his controversy with Luther, his natural arrogance increased, and he could brook no contradiction of his sentiments. During the ministry of Wolsey, the favourers of the Reformation met with little opposition; but it was different under his successor Sir Thomas More; who, though a man of gentle manners, and great integrity, showed his aversion to what he considered heterodoxy, by the greatest severity. James Bainham, a gentleman of the Temple, was brought to More, accused of holding the new opinions, and refusing to discover his accomplices, More ordered him to be whipped, and afterwards saw him put to the torture, in the Tower. Overcome by the severity of the torture, he abjured his opinions, but afterwards publicly acknowledged them with the deepest compunction for his apostasy, and was condemned as a relapsed

heretic, and burned in Smithfield. Many were brought to the bishop's court for having taught their children the Lord's Prayer in English, or for having read the New Testament in that language. Some suffered joyfully at the stake; and the doctrines of the Reformation were more widely diffused, instead of being repressed by this persecution. It was made treason to deny the king's supremacy; and many suffered for so doing. Fisher, bishop of Rochester, who had long enjoyed the favour of the king, was thrown into prison, for refusing the oath regarding the succession. He remained in prison more than a twelve-month, and the Pope, to compensate for his sufferings, created him cardinal. This so enraged Henry, that he was indicted for denying the king's supremacy, condemned, and beheaded. Sir Thomas More suffered in the same way, for having said, respecting the law of supremacy, that it was a two-edged sword, if answered one way, it confounded the soul; if another, it destroyed the body.

142. Henry now instituted a strict inquiry into the conduct of the friars. The slightest evidence against them was received, and, having resolved to abolish the monastic orders, he began by suppressing the lesser monasteries, to the number of 376. Their revenues, amounting to £32,000 a-year, were granted to the king, whose authority was so absolute, that no opposition was made. Tindal's translation of the Scriptures having been prohibited on pretence of incorrectness, an act was passed in 1536, for a new translation, which was accomplished in three years, notwithstanding the opposition of the Catholic party; and printed at Paris. During this year, Queen Catherine died at Kimbolton. A little before her death, she wrote a tender letter to the king, forgiving all injuries, and recommending their daughter to his protection, which affected him to tears. Queen Anne had favoured the Protestant cause, which procured her the enmity of the Catholics; and they used every means to irritate Henry's jealousy of her. Her sister-in-law, lady Rocheford, was her principal accuser. The queen

defended herself with great presence of mind; but was sentenced to be beheaded, or burned, at the king's pleasure. When sentence was pronounced, she lifted up her hands to heaven, and said, "O Creator! who art the way, the truth, and the life, thou knowest I have not deserved this." She sent a message to the king, protesting her innocence, and committing her daughter Elisabeth to his care. Of all those whom she had served in her prosperity, Cranmer alone attempted to soften the king's resentment towards her, though without effect. The executioner from Calais was sent for, as being most expert, and she was beheaded, May 19th, 1537. So little impression did the bloody catastrophe make on the cruel heart of Henry, that, on the following day, he married Jane Seymour, daughter of Sir John Seymour. On the death of Anne, the Pope was desirous of a reconciliation with Henry; but he had become too indifferent to papal censure, and found too great encrease of authority, as well as of revenue, from his present measures to desire any change. Absolute as his power was, however, the innovations he had made were too great to pass without opposition. The destitute condition of the monks, many of whom had been expelled from their convents, without means of subsistence, excited the compassion of the people. Discontent was first manifested in Lincolnshire, and afterwards in the northern counties; but was quickly suppressed. This success was followed by an event which had long been desired by Henry,—the birth of a son, Prince Edward, October, 1538; but his joy was lessened by the death of the queen, two days afterwards.

143. In this year, Henry undertook to confute, publicly, the opinions of Dr Lambert, a schoolmaster in London; who denied the real presence in the Sacrament. Westminster-hall was prepared for the display; and, after an unequal disputation of eight hours, Lambert was condemned to the flames. His sufferings were prolonged by the slowness of the fire; but his constancy remained; and he cried aloud, while expiring, "None but

Christ, none but Christ." About this time, four Dutch Anabaptists were burned at St Paul's cross, and two others, a man and a woman, at Smithfield. In 1539, a new parliament passed the law of Six Articles, or, as it was termed, the Bloody Statute. The denial of the first article, (the doctrine of the real presence,) incurred the penalty of death by fire, without the privilege of abjuring,—a severity unknown even in the Inquisition. Denial of the other articles, (communion in one kind, the perpetual obligation of vows of chastity, the utility of private masses, the celibacy of the clergy, and the necessity of auricular confession,) even when recanted, was punishable by forfeiture of goods, and imprisonment during the king's pleasure. Adherence or relapse, was considered felony, and punishable with death. Cranmer had the courage to oppose this bill, though desired by the king to absent himself. He was, however, obliged, in compliance with the statute, to dismiss his wife, niece to Osiander, a divine of Nuremberg; and Henry was satisfied with this submission. Latimer and Shaxton gave up their bishopricks, and were committed to prison.

144. Henry, soon after the death of Jane Seymour, began to think of a new marriage; and being disappointed in his wish of forming an alliance with a French princess, who had been betrothed to the king of Scotland, Cromwell proposed to him Anne of Cleves, whose father had great influence among the Lutheran princes, and whose sister was married to the Elector of Saxony. She came over to England; but Henry was so much disappointed in her manners and appearance, that nothing but the danger to which he would have been exposed by the resentment of her friends, prevented him from sending her back. His aversion to her extended to Cromwell, who had proposed the marriage; and as he had now fixed his affection on Catherine Howard, niece to the duke of Norfolk, who had long been at enmity with Cromwell, her insinuations were made use of to effect his ruin, as Anne Boleyn's had formerly been exerted against Wol-

sey. Cromwell was arrested, and committed to the Tower, for high treason, and the house of Peers condemned to death, without trial, a man whom, a few days before, they had declared worthy to be vicar-general of the universe. Cromwell possessed abilities, industry, and prudence. Though raised, from a low origin, to the height of power, he betrayed no insolence; and was anxious to requite and acknowledge obligations received in his humble fortune. He made use of his power to promote merit, and was the first to institute parish registers. He was executed July 28th, 1540.

145. Anne, who felt little uneasiness from the king's aversion, willingly agreed to a divorce; and received a settlement of £3000 a-year. Henry's marriage with Catherine Howard took place August 8th, and was regarded favourable to the Catholics. The council being now directed by Norfolk and Gardiner, a furious persecution of the Protestants ensued; but the king did not spare the Catholics, who denied his supremacy. A rebellion, which broke out in Yorkshire, was soon suppressed; but, as the rebels were supposed to have been instigated by the intrigues of Cardinal Pole, Henry determined to make the countess of Salisbury, who had been for some time in prison under sentence of death, suffer for her son's offences. He ordered her to be led to execution; but the venerable countess refused to lay her head on the block, and the executioner aimed many fruitless blows, as she ran about the scaffold, before he could give the fatal stroke. Thus perished the last of the line of Plantagenet.

146. Henry, desirous of maintaining a close union with Scotland, and anxious that his nephew should imitate his example, in throwing off his allegiance to the Pope, requested an interview at York, to which James agreed; but the clergy, fearing the consequences, employed every expedient to prevent the meeting; and being seconded by the entreaties of the queen, James was induced, first to delay his journey, and then to send excuses to Henry,

who had arrived at York. Enraged at this affront, he vowed vengeance, which he was prevented at that time from executing, by accounts he received of the misconduct of the queen, both before and after marriage. She, together with lady Rocheford, her confidant, the accuser of Anne Boleyn, was beheaded, on Tower-hill. Henry now showed his caprice in the changes he introduced in his religious tenets. His new doctrines, contained in a volume, called "*The Institution of a Christian Man*," were declared to be the standard of orthodoxy. With this he soon became dissatisfied, and ordered a new book to be composed, which he called the "*Erudition of a Christian Man*." In both these publications, he was careful to inculcate the doctrine of passive obedience, of which he was no less careful to enforce the practice.

147. Soon after the publication of the Scriptures, all but gentlemen and merchants, were prohibited from perusing them. Henry would only allow a copy to be deposited in some of the parish churches, where it was fixed by a chain.

148. Henry, determined to revenge the insult James had given him, in declining to meet him at York, made preparations for war; and the duke of Norfolk, with above 20,000 men, passed the Tweed, at Berwick, and marched along the river, as far as Kelso; but hearing that James had collected an army of 30,000, he retreated into England. James was desirous of pursuing them, and was surprised to find that the nobility, who were dissatisfied at the preference given to the clergy, opposed his intention, and refused to attend him. He resolved, however, to make the attempt with the forces that adhered to him; and sent 10,000 men to enter England at Solway Frith, while he followed at a short distance. The command of this army was taken from lord Maxwell, and given to Oliver Sinclair, a private gentleman, which gave great offence; and on a small body of the English appearing, November 24th, a panic seized the Scots, who fled, pursued by the enemy. Few were killed in this rout, but

many were taken prisoners; among whom were some of the principal nobility, who were all sent to London. James was so affected with grief and shame, on hearing of the defeat, that he gave himself up to despair; and hearing of the birth of a princess, he exclaimed, "The crown came with a woman, and will go with one: many miseries await this poor kingdom." He expired a few days after, in the flower of his age.

149. Henry, on hearing of this victory, and the death of his nephew, projected, as James had foreseen, the union of Scotland with England, by the marriage of his son with the infant heiress of that kingdom. The Scottish nobles were liberated without ransom, on condition that they should favour the negociation. To this they readily agreed; and the war, which had seemed so threatening to Scotland, was changed into amity. It was agreed that the queen should remain in Scotland, till she was ten years of age, and then be sent to England to be educated; and that six Scottish noblemen should be given as hostages to Henry. These measures, however, were soon disconcerted by the intrigues of cardinal Beaton, who roused the zeal of those who were attached to the Catholic faith, by representing the union with England as the forerunner of ruin to their religion; and the natural antipathy of the Scots to the English, made it easy to excite in them an aversion to the alliance.

150. Early in the year 1544, Henry sent a fleet and army to invade Scotland. The troops disembarked at Leith, which they took without resistance, and marched to Edinburgh; the gates of which were soon demolished; and the city, after being pillaged, was burned. The regent and the cardinal fled to Stirling. Hertford, who commanded the troops, marched eastward, laid waste the country, burned and destroyed Haddington, and Dunbar, and then returned to England; having lost only forty men. The earl of Arran, the regent, collected some forces; and, finding the English had departed, he turned them against Lennox, who was not unjustly suspected of correspon-

dence with England. Lennox was obliged to fly to England, where he received a pension from Henry, who also gave him in marriage his niece, Lady Margaret Douglas.

151. Henry had married, July 12th, 1543, Catherine Par, widow of Lord Latimer, a woman of merit, and great prudence. Having appointed her regent during his absence, Henry, who had agreed with Charles, to invade France, went over to Calais, July 14th, 1544, with 30,000 men, and all his principal nobility and gentry. The emperor, with an army of 60,000, had taken the field before the arrival of Henry. Luxemburg had surrendered to him; he took Commercy and Ligny, and laid siege to St Dizier, which made a brave resistance, but was taken by Charles; and finding his schemes for subduing France likely to fail, he made peace with Francis, without informing his ally. Henry, who had got possession of Boulogne, raised the siege of Montreuil, and returned to England, having, as formerly, made, at vast expense, an acquisition of no importance. The war with Scotland proceeded with varied success, and was signalled on both sides by the ravages made, rather than by any advantage gained. War with France also continued, and the expense obliged Henry to summon a new parliament, which, to prevent demands being made on themselves, voted the king all the revenues of the universities, chantries, and hospitals. This pleased the king by increasing his powers; but he did not touch the revenues. Peace was concluded with France, June, 1546, it being agreed that Henry should retain Boulogne, till a debt of 2,000,000 livres, due by Francis should be paid. In this treaty, peace with Scotland was comprehended.

152. Henry's health now began to decline; but his violence of temper and bigotry encreased. Anne Askew, a young person of great merit and beauty, and of high connections, was accused of denying one of the six articles: she was put to the torture, in the most barbarous manner, to induce her to confess who were her corre-

spondents at court; but her constancy baffled their efforts. She was condemned to the flames; and, being so dislocated by the rack that she could not stand, was carried to the stake. A priest and two other persons suffered with her, for the same cause. The queen narrowly escaped a similar fate. Having, in conversation with the king, expressed a difference of opinion, Henry was so provoked, that he complained to Gardiner, who eagerly represented that the more elevated the person who suffered, the greater glory would be in the sacrifice. The king's impetuosity being thus encouraged, he ordered articles of impeachment to be drawn up against the queen. She got intelligence of her danger, and contrived to appease the king; so that when the chancellor, with forty pursuivants, appeared to take her into custody, the king sharply reproved, and dismissed them.

153. The duke of Norfolk had been long considered the most powerful subject, and had rendered great service to the crown. He was regarded as the head of the catholic party; and Henry's jealousy was provoked by his exaltation, which he foresaw might prove dangerous during his son's minority. Norfolk and his son, the earl of Surrey, a young man of high accomplishments and bravery, were arrested, and sent to the Tower, on the same day. Surrey was condemned for high treason, and executed. Cranmer was opposed to Norfolk, from whom he had received many injuries; but, would take no part in the prosecution against him. Henry, though fast approaching his end, gave orders for the execution of Norfolk, on the 29th of January, but the king himself died the night before, and Norfolk was saved.

154. Henry died in the fifty-sixth year of his age, and thirty-eighth of his reign. It is asserted, that 72,000 criminals were executed, during this reign, for thefts and robbery; and that the number of prisoners for debts and crimes exceeded 60,000. This was greatly to be attributed to indolence, and want of occupation among the *lower classes*, commerce being almost engrossed by

foreigners who settled in the country, and excelled the English by their superior dexterity and industry; and so great was the jealousy towards them, that 15,000 Flemings were at one time obliged to leave London. The innovations made in the Catholic religion contributed afterwards to the regular execution of justice, by abolishing the privileges of the clergy, and sanctuaries for the protection of criminals. Laws were made with regard to beggars and vagrants, who were formerly supported and encouraged by the convents. The cultivation of vegetables was introduced into England, which had formerly been supplied from Holland. Hops then also began to be cultivated. Henry founded Trinity college in Cambridge, and gave it ample endowments. He erected six bishopricks,—Westminster, Oxford, Peterborough, Bristol, Chester, and Gloucester, all of which, except the first, still exist.

1547.]

EDWARD VI.

[1553.

155. Was only nine years of age when he succeeded to the crown. He was proclaimed, January 31st, 1547, and crowned, February 20th. Henry had appointed executors for the young king, and they elected the earl of Hertford, (uncle of the king,) who was created duke of Somerset, to be Protector. The duke was favourable to the doctrines of the reformed religion; and, in his efforts to promote its establishment, was greatly assisted by Cranmer, and Ridley, afterwards bishop of London. They were at the head of a committee appointed by the council to compose a new Liturgy; an act was passed to establish the new form of worship; and, in a short time, the greater part of the nation conformed to it. Gardiner, bishop of Winchester, obstinately adhered to popery; and, as he persisted in opposing and obstructing the Reformation, he was committed to the Fleet.

156. The statute of the Six Articles was repealed, orders issued for the removal of images from churches, and private masses abolished. The lady Mary alone refused to yield to the authority of the Council; obstinately ad-

hered to the mass, and professed herself willing to suffer death rather than relinquish her religion. Her kinsman, the emperor Charles, threatened hostilities, if liberty of conscience was refused her, and the young king lamented, with tears, his sister's obstinacy, and bewailed his hard fate in being obliged to participate, as he thought, in the sin of allowing her to continue such a mode of worship. Several Lutheran divines found refuge at this time in England, from the persecutions to which they were exposed by the emperor in Germany. Two persons suffered persecution to death for religious opinions in the beginning of this reign,—one, a woman, named Joan Bocher; the other, a Dutchman, named Van Paris, accused of Arianism. Edward long refused to sign the warrants for execution; and Cranmer was employed to persuade him, and represented that it was his duty to repress errors which were in direct opposition to the Apostles' creed. Edward at last submitted, but told Cranmer that the guilt was on his head.

157. The Protector, desirous of executing the late king's project of uniting Scotland with England, by the marriage of their sovereigns, required the fulfilment of the treaty; and on its being refused, he invaded Scotland with a large army. Having crossed the borders at Berwick, he advanced towards Edinburgh, and an engagement took place, 10th September, 1547, near Pinkey, in which the Scots were defeated with the loss of ten thousand. From the field of battle to Edinburgh, a space of five miles, the ground was strowed with dead bodies; and about fifteen hundred were made prisoners. The queen-dowager and Arran fled to Stirling, and with difficulty collected forces to check the incursions of small bodies of the English. Somerset might now have imposed what terms he pleased on the Scottish nation, but lost his advantage by his impatience to return to England, where his brother Lord Seymour had been intriguing against him in his absence. Having taken some castles, and *received the submission* of some of the counties on the

borders, he left Warwick to negotiate with the earl of Arran, and retired from Scotland. The English fleet destroyed the shipping on the coast, took Broughty on the frith of Tay; and, having fortified it, left a garrison.

158. These hostilities inspired the Scots with the greatest aversion to the Union: even those favourable to the alliance would not submit to have it thus imposed on them. The earl of Huntly said he disliked not the match, but the manner of wooing; and the queen-dowager finding these sentiments prevalent, called a parliament, in an abbey, near Haddington, where it was proposed to send the young queen to France. The clergy seconded the proposal with all their zeal, French gold having been plentifully distributed. Arran received a pension, and had the title of duke of Chatelherault conferred on him. It was agreed that she should be sent to France, and, as a necessary consequence, that she should be married to the Dauphin. Four French galleys lying in the frith, sailed by the Orkneys to the West coast, and Mary, attended by Lords Erskine and Livingston put to sea at Dumbarton. After a stormy passage, she arrived at Brest, was conducted to Paris, and soon after betrothed to the Dauphin.

159. The protection of France was of great consequence to Scotland, but it derived still greater benefit from the divisions and intrigues which prevailed in the English council, during the remainder of this reign. Lord Seymour, the protector's brother, who had married Catherine, the late king's widow, was a man of insatiable ambition; and, being envious of his brother's power, he endeavoured to disturb his administration, by representing, that the offices of Protector of the kingdom, and Governor of the king, were trusts too important to be held by one individual. On the death of his wife, the queen-dowager, he aspired to the hand of the lady Elisabeth, then in the sixteenth year of her age; but his projects against the Protector being discovered, he was accused of high treason, and executed on Tower-hill, March, 1549.

160. The temporary evils attending the suppression of the monasteries were now severely felt by the common people. The expelled monks being obliged to labour for their subsistence, every common occupation was overstocked with hands; and, while wages were lowered, the price of commodities was raised. From murmurs they proceeded in many counties to rebellion; and though the Protector pitied their condition, and endeavoured to redress their grievances, the commotion became general; and in Norfolk was attended with acts of violence. One Ket, a tanner, assumed authority over them, erected his tribunal under an old oak, and summoned the gentry to appear before him. The marquis of Northampton was sent against him, and met with a repulse. The earl of Warwick, with six thousand men, after some skirmishes with the rebels, made a general attack on them, and put them to flight: two thousand were killed in the action and pursuit. Ket was hanged at Norwich castle; nine of his followers on the boughs of the oak, and the insurrection was speedily suppressed.

161. The Scots took advantage of these commotions to expel the English: they took the fortress of Broughty, and put the garrison to the sword. The plague having broke out among the English troops, they were unable to keep possession of Haddington, and were obliged to remove the artillery and garrison to Berwick. The king of France also took this opportunity to attempt the recovery of Boulogne, and the territory which Henry VIII. had conquered. He took several castles; but was prevented from succeeding against Boulogne, by a pestilence in the French camp, which obliged him to retire to Paris.

162. Somerset was not in a condition to continue the war, and there no longer appeared any object to be gained by it. The Scots had sent away their queen, and could not, though inclined, complete the marriage with Edward. Henry had stipulated to restore Boulogne in 1554, and *it seemed of no great importance to anticipate, by a few*

years, the fulfilment of the treaty. Yet, on proposing these reasons to the council, he met with strong opposition from his enemies, the chief of whom was Dudley, earl of Warwick, son of Dudley the obnoxious minister of Henry VII. He was artful and ambitious, and had long endeavoured to procure his own elevation by the fall of Somerset. He formed a party against him, and obliged him to resign the protectorship. Warwick now bore the chief sway in the council, and found himself involved in the same difficulties that had embarrassed the Protector.

163. To obtain peace with France, Boulogne was surrendered, on payment of 400,000 crowns, and the treaty with Scotland obliged them to restore Lauder and Dunglas, and to demolish the fortresses of Roxburgh and Eyemouth. The ambition of Warwick led him to regard encrease of power or possessions, only as steps to farther acquisitions. The earl of Northumberland had died without issue; and as his brother, Sir Thomas Percy, had been attainted during the late reign, Warwick secured for himself the ample possessions of that nobleman, and the title of duke of Northumberland; but finding that Somerset, though degraded from his dignity, still enjoyed a large share of popularity, he determined to accomplish his ruin. He was acquitted of the charge of high treason, but condemned for felony, having expressed a design of assassinating Northumberland and other members of council. Care had been taken to prejudice the king against his uncle, and to prevent his friends from having access to him. He was beheaded on Tower-hill, on the 22d January, 1552, the spectators entertaining to the last moment hopes of his pardon, and many rushed to dip their handkerchiefs in his blood, to preserve as a precious relic; and when Northumberland afterwards met a like doom, they were displayed to him with upbraidings of his cruelty.

164. The health of Edward was now very precarious, and Northumberland represented to him the persecution

to which Protestants would be exposed by the accession of Mary, and that there was no way of preventing the re-establishment of popery but by her exclusion. His sister Elisabeth was liable to no such objection; but the one sister could not be excluded without excluding the other: and the succession then devolved on the marchioness of Dorset, elder daughter of the queen of France, Henry's sister. Edward agreed to have the succession submitted to Council; and they signed a deed, by which the princesses were set aside. Cranmer alone hesitated; but at last yielded to the earnest entreaties of the king. The crown was settled on lady Jane Gray, daughter of the marchioness, a young lady distinguished for learning and piety, with whom and his fourth son, Lord Guilford Dudley, Northumberland immediately brought about a marriage; hoping, by thus securing the crown in his own family, to govern the nation at his pleasure.

165. The young king after this got rapidly worse, the physicians were dismissed by Northumberland's advice, and he was put under the care of an ignorant old woman, who undertook to cure him. Her prescriptions encreased all his bad symptoms; the art of the physicians was now ineffectual, and he expired at Greenwich, on the 6th July, 1553, in the seventeenth year of his age, and seventh of his reign. His excellent qualities had rendered him an object of tender affection, and he died regretted by the whole nation.

166. Immediately after Edward's death, Northumberland, Suffolk, and others of the nobility, repaired to lady Jane, and saluted her as queen. Being ignorant of the transactions of her father-in-law, she received the tidings with surprise and grief, pleaded the preferable title of the princesses, and entreated to be allowed to remain in a private station; till, overcome by their solicitations, she reluctantly suffered herself to be conveyed to the Tower, where it was then usual for the sovereign to reside for a few days after accession. Orders were given *by the council* to proclaim Jane throughout the kingdom;

but it was only done in London and the neighbourhood; and there without acclamation. The Dudleys were hated by the people; and, though Mary's accession was dreaded by the Protestants, the nation had not so far forgot the miseries of the civil war occasioned by breaking the line of succession, as to make them risk incurring a repetition of like dangers.

167. Mary was on her way to London by Northumberland's order, to attend the king, when she received private intelligence of his death, from the earl of Arundel, and of the conspiracy against her. She retired to Norfolk, and addressed letters to the nobility and gentry, requiring their assistance in defence of her crown. She notified to the council her knowledge of the king's death, promised pardon for passed offences, and required them to give orders for her proclamation. The nobility flocked around her with re-enforcements, and, on her assurance that no change would be made on the laws and religion then established, she received from the people, on her approach to London, expressions of loyalty and attachment. Northumberland had levied forces; but finding them too weak to encounter the queen's army, he disbanded them, intending to quit the kingdom. This not being permitted, he proclaimed Mary in Cambridge.

1553.]

MARY

[1558.

168. Was proclaimed in London, July 20th, 1553, and crowned at Westminster, 1st October following. Jane, having worn the crown for ten days, resigned it with evident satisfaction, and returned to her former residence. Northumberland was arrested, brought to trial, and executed, August 23d. Sentence was also pronounced against lady Jane and Lord Guilford; but not then put in execution, Mary being desirous to gain popularity by the appearance of clemency.

169. It soon appeared that Mary had no intention to fulfil her promise of maintaining the reformed religion. Gardiner, Bonner, and some others, were re-instated in

their sees, archbishop Cranmer, bishops Ridley, Ho and Latimer were thrown into prison ; many of the c deprived of their livings, and prohibited from prea without a license, which, as might be supposed, was granted to Catholics. To strengthen their cause, a riage was proposed between Mary and Philip of S and, though the treaty of alliance was made as favor to England as possible, it gave general dissatisfaction the nation, and insurrections took place, which occas much bloodshed. An attempt was again made to lady Jane to the throne ; for which four hundred ar to have suffered, and it was made a pretext for p into execution the sentence against lady Jane an husband. She calmly received the summons she long expected, defended her religion in the disputes which she was harassed during a reprieve of three granted to attempt her conversion to the Catholic. She also wrote a letter to her sister in the Greek guage, exhorting her to persevere in maintaining her ious principles. Her husband obtained permissi see her on the day of execution ; but she refused, sa it would overcome the fortitude of both, and that separation would be but for a moment.

170. It had been intended to execute them o same scaffold ; but the council, fearing the excitement their youth, beauty, innocence, and noble birth migl casion, gave orders that she should be beheaded v the verge of the Tower. She gave her husband a of remembrance from the window as he was led to cution, and saw his headless body carried back in a while she tranquilly awaited the hour which should her to a like fate. On the scaffold, she acknowle her offence in not having with sufficient steadiness rej the crown ; she uttered no complaint of the severity which she had been treated, but, with a serene co nance, submitted herself to the executioner. The fa this amiable couple, neither of whom had completed seventeenth year, excited universal pity and indign

The duke of Suffolk was executed soon after; and the Tower and prisons were filled with the nobility and gentry, whose influence with the people, rather than their guilt, rendered them obnoxious to the queen.

171. Philip arrived at Southampton, July, 1554; and Mary met him at Winchester, where they were married by Gardiner; and, having made a pompous entry into London, they proceeded to Windsor, where they afterwards resided. Philip's haughty and reserved behaviour was ill calculated to remove the prejudice against him, and though the queen, to gratify his ambition, attempted to get him declared presumptive heir to the crown, and to put the administration into his hands, she failed in her endeavours, and could not even procure consent to his coronation.

172. A cruel persecution of all who would not conform to Popery now commenced. The first victim was Rogers, prebendary of St Paul's, a man eminent for piety and learning. He suffered at Smithfield. Having requested to see his wife before he died, Gardiner added insult to cruelty, by telling him, that, being a priest, he could have no wife. Hooper, bishop of Gloucester, was tried at the same time, but was sent to his own diocese to suffer. He endured with constancy the torture of the flames, for three quarters of an hour; praying, and exhorting the people till his swollen tongue refused utterance. Sanders was burned at Coventry; a pardon was offered, if he would recant, but he rejected it, and embraced the stake, saying, "Welcome the cross of Christ! welcome everlasting life." Taylor, vicar of Hadley, when tied to the stake, repeated a psalm in English. One of the guards struck him on the mouth, and bade him speak Latin; another gave him a blow on the head, which put an end to his torments. Gardiner, fearing to draw upon himself the hatred of the public, expressed in murmurs at these executions, devolved the work of persecution on Bonner, a man whose brutal disposition made him delight in the torments he inflicted. Ridley and Latimer suffered at Oxford, and encouraged each other. Ridley said, "Be

of good cheer, brother; for God will either assuage the flame, or enable us to bear it." Latimer replied, "Yes, we shall this day kindle such a torch in England as I trust shall never be extinguished." The venerable Cranmer, weakened by long confinement and cruel treatment, and assailed by entreaty and threatenings was induced, in an unguarded moment, to sign a recantation of his opinions. This was no sooner received and circulated, than the cruel and perfidious queen and council sent orders for his execution, requiring the public declaration of his faith in St Mary's church. To the surprise of the hearers, he repeated the Apostles' creed, denounced the Pope as the enemy of Christ, and declared his willingness to testify his attachment to the Protestant faith, by submitting to a death, the fear of which had led him into an action which of all others he most deeply lamented,—that of subscribing contrary to his conscience; but he said the hand which had offended should first suffer. He was led to the stake amidst the insults of the indignant Catholics, and stretching his right hand into the flames, he held it there, without the least expression of pain or weakness, till entirely consumed; frequently exclaiming, "This hand hath offended, this unworthy hand!" It is computed that during this persecution, which lasted for three years, nearly three hundred suffered at the stake; among whom were 4 bishops, 1 archbishop, 21 clergymen, 8 gentlemen, 84 tradesmen, 100 husbandmen, servants, and labourers, 55 women, and 4 children. Not satisfied with these bloody acts, orders were given by the Council to the magistrates to be more diligent in extirpating heresy. Steps were taken to introduce the Inquisition into England; spies and informers were employed, and proclamations issued against books of heresy, treason, or sedition. Those possessed of such books, who did not immediately burn them, without reading or showing them to others, were to be esteemed rebels, and executed without delay. This violence rendered the government daily more odious; a spirit of opposition appeared in parlia-

ment, and the Queen had recourse to violent extortions to procure a supply of money, which they had refused to grant her. Commerce received constant interruption from her rapacity ; she borrowed large sums abroad, for which she compelled the city of London to become security ; and all these expedients were employed to gratify the demands of her husband, who studied only his own interest, and disregarded that of the Queen and the English nation.

173. In 1555, Philip had become, by the resignation of the emperor, master of the richest and most extensive dominions in Europe ; but, being the year following involved by the Pope in war with France, he desired to obtain the assistance of England. To this the nation was averse, and refused, notwithstanding the Queen's menaces, to consent ; on which, in her former arbitrary manner, she declared war, equipped a fleet, to victual which she seized on all the corn that was to be found in Norfolk and Suffolk, and levied an army of 10,000 men, which she sent over to join Philip ; while, to prevent disturbance at home, many persons of distinction were sent to the Tower. Philip was successful in the battle of St Quentin ; but, having retired to winter-quarters, the vigilance of the duke of Guise prompted him to attempt the taking of Calais, which had hitherto been deemed impracticable. The governor, Lord Wentworth, was a brave officer ; but, having lost two hundred men in a furious attack made on the castle, and being blockaded by sea and by land, he found his garrison so weak, that he was obliged to capitulate, and thus in eight days, and in the depth of winter, did the duke of Guise succeed in making himself master of this strong fortress, which had cost Edward III. a siege of eleven months, at the head of a victorious army. The English had held it for upwards of two hundred years ; and, as it afforded an easy entrance into France, it was considered a valuable possession, and its loss occasioned clamorous discontent against the conduct of the Queen and council, who by engaging

in an unnecessary war had exposed the nation to su-
grace.

174. Mary's health had been long declining; and n-
ly of a gloomy disposition, every thing seemed now
spire to encrease her dejection,—the loss of Cal-
indifference, and absence of her husband, conscie
of the hatred of her subjects; and apprehension
danger to which the Catholic religion would be e-
by the accession of Elisabeth, preyed upon her
and threw her into a lingering fever, of which she
17th November, 1558, in the sixth year of her rei-
forty-third of her age. Her bad temper and narr-
derstanding, put no restraint on her bigotry and re-
and, amidst a complication of vices, we find scarce
virtues. The only circumstance which could hav-
her death be regretted, was, that it put an end
negociation into which Philip had entered for the
tion of Calais.

1558.]

ELISABETH.

175. The accession of Elisabeth, daughter of Hen-
and Ann Boleyn, gave general satisfaction. The
to which she had been exposed, during the late
had excited the compassion, and her prudent
under them had gained the esteem of the people
attachment to the Protestant religion was well
and she immediately proceeded to re-establish
imprisoned for their religious opinions were set f-
those in banishment were recalled. She showed
position to forget the injuries she had received f-
dividuals; and, with the exception of Bonner, fro-
she turned aside as an object of horror, she receiv-
affability the congratulations of all parties. Tho-
terminated to restore the religion established by Ed-
she proceeded cautiously; and, not to alarm the C-
she retained eleven of her sister's counselors;
balance their authority, she added eight who were

Protestants. A parliament was summoned, which vested in the Queen the supremacy over the Church of England, abolished the mass, ordained the reading of the liturgy, the Lord's prayer, the creed, and the gospels in English, and thus, in one session, and in the commencement of the reign of a young queen, was the system of religion altered without any violence or bloodshed. Philip had made overtures of marriage to Elisabeth soon after her accession, which she declined, being aware of the dissatisfaction with which his union with her sister had been regarded by the nation. After various negotiations with France, it was at length agreed, in 1559, that Calais should be restored at the expiration of eight years; that, in case of failure, Henry should pay five hundred thousand crowns, and still be under obligation to restore it: peace with Scotland was the consequence of that with France.

176. Elisabeth now devoted her attention to the civil government of the kingdom, in which she was greatly assisted by her prudent choice of counselors. She paid off the debts contracted by the crown, restored the purity of the coin, encouraged agriculture and trade, promoted navigation, and so much increased the magnitude and number of ships for the public service, that she was styled The restorer of naval glory, and the queen of the northern seas.

177. The Reformation had during this time been making progress in Scotland: John Knox had returned from Geneva, where he had spent some years in banishment. His vehement declamations against the idolatry of the Church of Rome excited zeal for its subversion; the monasteries were pillaged, images and pictures were destroyed, the altars overthrown, and nothing but the walls of the edifices left standing. The queen-regent assembled an army to repress these violences: the reformers prepared for defence, and open rebellion ensued. They besieged and took Perth, proceeded to Stirling, which made no resistance; and the gates of Edinburgh were opened to them. On the interposition of the duke of Chatelherault,

the queen-regent granted them a toleration of their religion, and they engaged to commit no farther depredations on the churches.

178. Elisabeth now interposed in behalf of the reformers, and to oblige the French to evacuate Scotland. To this they were soon obliged to agree by the dispersion of the French fleet by a storm, and the death of the queen-regent in Edinburgh castle. Francis and Mary refused to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh, and to resign their pretensions to the English throne, which excited the jealousy of Elisabeth against Mary, and gave rise to the enmity which afterwards existed between them.

179. On the death of Francis, December, 1561, Mary found her abode in France disagreeable, from the machinations of Catherine, the queen-mother: and, having resolved to go to Scotland, whither she was invited by her subjects, she demanded a safe passage through England, which was refused by Elisabeth, who even sent a fleet to intercept her in her return home. Mary embarked at Calais; and, favoured by a thick fog, escaped the English fleet, and arrived in safety at Leith. On leaving the country where she had been educated, and where she had borne the highest rank, she felt much regret; and, as if foreboding the miseries that awaited her in her native land, she kept her eyes fixed on the French coast as long as she could see it, often repeating, "Farewell, France! farewell, beloved country! I shall never see thee more." Although received by her subjects with every expression of attachment, she soon found herself exposed to severe mortifications. She made no attempt to restore Popery, yet it was with difficulty she was permitted to have mass celebrated in her private chapel. It was asserted from the pulpit, that one mass was more terrible than ten thousand armed men. Mary endeavoured to gain the favour of John Knox by the most gracious condescension; but his zeal for the establishment of the reformed religion was too great to permit him to countenance, even in his *sovereign*, what he considered prejudicial to its interests.

He usually called her *Jezebel*; and to the harshness and severe treatment she experienced from her subjects, (so different from what she had been accustomed to,) may be attributed, in a great measure, the errors of her subsequent conduct.

180. The religious wars, which, for nearly forty years, rendered France a scene of horror, now raged with fury. The Catholics were empowered, by an edict, to massacre the Hugonots, (so the reformers were called in France,) and Philip, dreading that the Reformation would spread in the Netherlands, had entered into an alliance with the princes of Guise, to suppress it. The prince of Condé, unable to withstand such a combination, craved the assistance of Elisabeth, and offered to put Havre-de-Grace into the hands of the English, on condition of receiving three thousand men to protect the place, three thousand to defend Rouen and Dieppe, and a supply of a hundred thousand crowns. The Queen readily complied, being anxious to get possession of Havre, in hopes she might then oblige the French to restore Calais. Rouen was taken by the Catholics; but the admiral kept his army in a body, and took several places in Normandy. Elisabeth sent another supply of money; but these expenses emptied her exchequer, and she was reluctantly obliged to summon a parliament to obtain a supply.

181. Shortly before this meeting, the Queen had been dangerously ill of small-pox; and the commons entreated anew, that a successor should be appointed, to avoid the evils of contending titles. This subject was always unpleasant to the Queen, and she returned an evasive answer. After the assassination of the duke of Guise, peace was concluded between the Hugonots and the court of France; and it was expected, that Elisabeth would relinquish Havre, on payment of the money she had advanced. This proposal she rejected. Warwick was ordered to prepare against an attack; but the plague made such ravages among the English soldiers, that sometimes a hundred died in a day, and Warwick was

obliged to capitulate, July 28, 1563. To add to the calamity, the army brought the plague to England, and about 20,000 died of it in London in one year.

182. Peace continued with Scotland, and the two Queens, who now professed entire affection to each other, had agreed to meet at York; but Elisabeth delayed the interview. Her jealousy of Mary was not abated; she constantly endeavoured to prevent her from forming any alliance; and, after two years spent in evasions and artifices, Mary's subjects became anxious to conclude a marriage. Their choice fell on Lord Darnley, son of the earl of Lennox, by Lady Margaret Douglas, niece to Henry VIII., and daughter of the earl of Angus and Margaret queen of Scotland. He was thus by his mother a branch of the same family with herself, and, after her, next heir to the English crown. Having been born and educated in England, it was hoped this marriage would be acceptable to Elisabeth; but, though she secretly encouraged the negociation, she, with her usual duplicity towards Mary, publicly exclaimed against it, and made it a pretext for encouraging the discontent of the Scottish nobility and clergy.

183. Mary's conduct had hitherto been in every respect praise-worthy; yet had she been unable, from her attachment to the Catholic faith, to acquire that popularity which might have been expected from her amiable qualities and superior talents. Her marriage with Darnley took place in 1565, and the duke of Chatelherault, the earl of Murray, and some other noblemen, becoming jealous of the favours shown to the king's friends, entered into a conspiracy, with the assistance of Elisabeth, against Mary; but her vigorous measures quickly suppressed it, and they were obliged to take refuge in England.

184. Mary soon discovered the weakness and vices of Darnley's character, and restrained her liberality towards him. His resentment of this encreased her dislike; and, enraged at her imagined neglects, he took vengeance on *all who enjoyed her regard*. The assassination of her

secretary Rizzio, in her presence, by his orders, encreased her aversion to him; but her friends were gratified by an appearance of reconciliation between them, soon after the birth of her son, June 19th, 1566, in Edinburgh castle. On account of his health, Darnley resided in a house called the Kirk-of-field, at a short distance from the palace. Mary attended him there; but on the 9th February, 1567, she remained at the palace, to be present at the marriage of one of her servants. About two in the morning, the town was alarmed by a noise which was occasioned by the king's house being blown up by powder, and his dead body was found in a neighbouring field. The earl of Bothwell, a man of profligate character, who had insinuated himself into the Queen's favour, was accused of the crime, and brought to trial, but acquitted.

185. Her marriage with Bothwell, soon after, though at the recommendation of the nobility, drew upon herself suspicions of participation in the king's murder. An insurrection took place; Bothwell was defeated at Carberry-hill, escaped to Denmark, where he was imprisoned; became insane, and died miserably. Mary was conducted to Edinburgh amidst the insults of the populace, and afterwards imprisoned in Lochleven castle. From this she escaped, and was joined by many of the nobility at Hamilton. The Regent assembled an army to oppose her: a battle was fought at Langside, near Glasgow, in which the Queen was defeated, and fled to England, craving the protection of Elisabeth. This was refused till she had cleared herself of the accusations against her; she was put under the custody of the earl of Shrewsbury, and was detained, for the long space of eighteen years, a captive in the country to which she had come as a suppliant for protection.

186. Many conspiracies were formed to restore her to her throne. Norfolk, Northumberland, and many others of inferior note were brought to the scaffold for their share in these enterprises. The plot of Anthony Babington, projected by the Pope, the house of Guise, and the court

of Spain, hastened the destruction of the unhappy Queen, whom they intended to serve. Their plans to assassinate Elisabeth, to procure a foreign invasion, and an insurrection at home, were discovered to Walsingham. Fourteen of the conspirators were condemned and executed, and Mary was brought to trial as being concerned in the conspiracy. She protested against their right to try an independent princess; but was induced to submit, and denied having any knowledge of the conspiracy against Elisabeth's life. She was, however, condemned, though the proof of her guilt rested chiefly on the evidence of her two secretaries, and on correspondence fabricated with a view to implicate her.

187. Great efforts were made by foreign powers, particularly by her son, the king of Scotland, to avert the doom; but in vain. Elisabeth had now brought a rival, whom she had long hated and feared, into the situation she had anxiously desired; and nothing restrained her from the immediate gratification of her resentment, but anxiety to have it believed, that she consented to her execution with reluctance, and from necessity. The earls of Shrewsbury and Kent were dispatched to Fotheringay castle, where they informed Mary, that she must prepare for death next morning at eight. She received the intelligence with surprise, but without dismay; declared her ignorance of the conspiracy against Elisabeth, and requested her confessor might be allowed to attend her: but this was denied. After their departure, she supped sparingly, as was her custom, and comforted her servants, whose sorrow was too great to be concealed. She distributed among them her clothes and jewels, and wrote letters recommending them to the king of France and the duke of Guise. She then went to bed, slept some hours, rose, and spent the rest of the night in prayer. Having dressed for the melancholy occasion, the sheriff entered, and told her the hour was come. She replied, she was ready; and followed him with a serene and composed countenance. She beheld, without dismay, the scaffold and

the executioners, prayed for her son, and for Queen Elisabeth, and for an end to her own troubles; and having calmly laid her head on the block, it was severed from her body at two strokes. Thus perished on the eighth of February, 1587, the beautiful and unfortunate Mary Stuart, Queen of Scotland, in the forty-fifth year of her age, and nineteenth of her captivity. Elisabeth affected the deepest sorrow, when informed of the event, and threatened her ministers for having acted without authority. Her secretary, Davison, was treated with great severity: he was imprisoned, and fined ten thousand pounds. James showed great resentment; but was at last appeased by Elisabeth's expressions of sorrow, and a friendly correspondence afterwards existed between them.

188. Philip of Spain, actuated by resentment for the assistance Elisabeth had given to the Hugonots, now determined to invade England; and, to retard the expedition, Sir Francis Drake was sent to attack the Spanish fleet, lying at Cadiz. He burned a hundred vessels laden with ammunition, destroyed a large ship belonging to the marquis of Santa Cruz, and captured a rich Spanish vessel returning from the East Indies. This success encouraged the English seamen. Preparations were made for resistance; and all ranks showed a readiness to assist in defending their liberty and religion from the dangers with which they were threatened. Lord Howard of Effingham was appointed admiral, and Drake, Hawkins, and other renowned officers, served under him. The principal fleet was stationed at Plymouth, and a squadron lay off Dunkirk, to intercept the duke of Parma. An army was stationed along the south coast, to prevent the landing of the Spaniards. The Queen maintained the greatest tranquillity, and availed herself of every resource, to animate the soldiers. She appeared on horseback at Tilbury, and rode through the lines, exhorting them to remember their duty, professing her intention to lead them against the enemy, and rather to perish in battle, than witness the ruin and slavery of her people. This

conduct inspired them with the most enthusiastic adoration and attachment to the Queen.

189. The Spanish fleet, styled *The Invincible Armada*, set sail from Lisbon, on the 29th May, 1588; but a violent tempest scattered the ships, sunk some of the smaller ones, and obliged them to take shelter in the bay of Spain. Having repaired the damage, the fleet, consisting of 130 vessels, again set out, and were met in the Channel by the English fleet, information of their approach having been given by a Scottish pirate. The admiral gave orders to avoid coming to close fight, but to take the opportunity of intercepting straggling vessels which they were successful. While the Armada lay to anchor off Calais, waiting the approach of the duke of Parma, Effingham filled eight small vessels with combustibles, and setting fire to them, sent them among the enemy. Taking advantage of the confusion thus occasioned, he attacked and dispersed the fleet; and, being damaged many others, took or destroyed twelve vessels. The great size of the Spanish ships was no advantage to them: it exposed them the more to the fire of the English while their cannon, placed too high, shot over the heads of the English; and every encounter diminished the confidence of the Spaniards, and increased that of the English. The Spanish admiral finding, that, while the loss had been great, only one small vessel of the enemy had been destroyed, was unwilling to continue the unequal contest, and prepared to return; and, the wind being adverse to his passage through the Channel, he resolved to sail northwards. A violent storm overtook them after they had passed the Orkneys, and, the mariners being unable to govern the unwieldy vessels, they were driven to the Western isles, or on the coast of Ireland, where they were wrecked. Of the boasted Armada, the preparation for which had exhausted the revenues of Spain, and which for three years, filled all Europe with consternation and anxiety, not one half returned, and those in a very

aged condition. Queen Elisabeth went in state to St Paul's, to return thanks for the victory.

190. In 1589, the English attacked the vessels on the Spanish coast, burned some ships of war, and defeated an army assembled to oppose them. They pillaged some of the towns, and ravaged the country. Finding their ammunition and provisions exhausted, they returned to England, having derived more honour than profit from this enterprise. The brave and enterprising spirit which distinguished the commanders of this time, among whom were Howard, Drake, Cavendish, Raleigh, and Hawkins, raised the British navy to that superiority which it has ever since maintained.

191. Elisabeth was next engaged in giving assistance to Henry IV. (who had succeeded to the French crown on the assassination of Henry III., August, 1589) against Philip and the army of the League. She sent him a large sum of money, and a re-enforcement of 4000 men, whose successes revived in France the fame of English valour. Henry gained a complete victory at Ivry; but some advantages obtained by Philip induced Elisabeth to send over more forces, which were commanded by the young earl of Essex. Elisabeth, at the same time, employed her naval power against Philip, to intercept his West India treasures; but, though the Spaniards suffered considerable loss, the English reaped little profit, these enterprises being attended with great expense, both to the nation and to individuals.

192. A powerful fleet sailed from Plymouth for Cadiz, June 1st, 1596. After obliging the enemy's vessels to retreat, and having run many of them aground, they successfully attacked Cadiz, where they made rich plunder. Essex, who commanded, generously put a stop to the slaughter, and treated the prisoners with kindness. His desire to keep possession of the city was opposed by all the other soldiers and seamen; who, satisfied with the honour they had acquired, wished to return home with their booty. A large fleet was prepared the following

year to prevent a descent on Ireland, intended to be made by the Spaniards. On leaving Plymouth they encountered a violent storm, which dispersed them; and Essex confined his attempts to the intercepting of the India fleet, which was to have been the second object of the expedition: even in this they were unfortunate, taking only three vessels.

193. Ireland had now been for four centuries under the nominal authority of England, but had been so cruelly neglected that, at the close of the sixteenth century, the natives were sunk into a state of ignorance and barbarity, resembling that of savages; and their animosity to the English increased every day. In 1560, Shan O'Neale raised a rebellion in Ulster, which was followed by various others, some of them encouraged by Philip of Spain. Various expedients were tried to bring Ireland to a state of order and submission. With a view of introducing arts and learning, and civilising the manners of the inhabitants, the university of Dublin was founded. Hugh O'Neale had been raised to the dignity of earl of Tyrone by Elisabeth; but preferring the pride of barbarous dominion to the advantages of tranquillity, he fomented the discontent of the rebels; and, with the assistance of Spain, maintained open rebellion, assuming the character of Deliverer of his country.

194. The English council now saw the necessity of adopting more vigorous measures; and the earl of Essex was sent over with the title of lord lieutenant, and with greater powers and authority than had been granted to any of his predecessors. To ensure the overthrow of the rebels, an army of 20,000 foot, and 2000 horse was levied. Essex left London, March, 1600; but, instead of immediately attacking Tyrone in Ulster, he, by the advice of the Irish council, made a useless expedition into Munster; and by the middle of July the army was greatly diminished by sickness, while nothing of importance had been accomplished. A re-enforcement of 2000 men was sent, at his request; yet so averse was

the army to encounter Tyrone, that many feigned sickness, others deserted; and Essex found that he could not, after leaving the necessary garrisons, lead more than 4000 against the rebels. As they avoided coming to an action, and as the season was now far advanced, he, in a conference with Tyrone, concluded a truce to the first of May.

195. Elisabeth was much provoked at this issue of so expensive an enterprise; and Essex, hearing of her anger, hastily, and against orders, resolved to return to England. Surprised by the sudden appearance of her favourite, she at first received him with kindness, but afterwards, thinking it necessary to show her displeasure, she ordered him to be twice examined by the council, and to be committed to the custody of the lord-keeper. Her displeasure was kept up by the accounts received from Ireland. Tyrone, in less than three months broke the truce, and the rebels over-ran Ireland; but Lord Mountjoy, who was appointed to succeed Essex, advanced into Ulster, the chief seat of the rebels; fortified Derry, and Mount Norris, and reduced Tyrone to great extremities. The Spaniards were afterwards defeated at Kinsale, and expelled the island, and, Tyrone being at last obliged to surrender, an end was put to the war in 1603.

196. Essex, after some months' confinement, had been allowed to retire to his own house, and it was expected he would have been soon restored to the Queen's favour; but, being refused a renewal of a monopoly for sweet wines, his patience was exhausted; and thinking the Queen to be inexorable, his proud spirit, which had with difficulty been so long restrained, broke out in violent and seditious projects. These were revealed to Elisabeth, and he received a summons to attend the court, which he refused to obey. He repaired to London, hoping his popularity would induce the citizens to support him; but not one joined him, and he with difficulty returned to Essex-house, from which he was conveyed to the Tower, brought to trial, and condemned. Bacon,

afterwards so distinguished, and who had often experienced the generosity of Essex, scrupled not, on this occasion, to appear against, and assist in condemning his benefactor. Elisabeth had often counterfeited reluctance in signing warrants, but in this case it was real. The combat between her resentment and tenderness was so great, that she repeatedly signed and countermanded the warrant for his execution; till at last, worn out with the importunities of his enemies, and indignant at his obstinacy in refusing, as she thought, to apply for pardon, she gave consent, and he was privately executed in the Tower, 25th February, 1601.

197. Elisabeth, from this time, sunk into a state of settled melancholy, and derived no pleasure from the successful termination of the Irish war; though she continued from habit to exert the powers of her prerogative, which she carried to a greater height than any other sovereign of England. The granting of monopolies, which was the expedient by which she rewarded her servants and courtiers, was felt to be an intolerable grievance, as commodities were thereby not only raised to an enormous price, but a restraint was put on industry and commerce. Many petitions were given in for redress; but it was not till the end of her reign that she would comply with the request; and then it was granted as an act of condescension, it being asserted, that the royal prerogative was neither to be disputed nor limited. The speaker and other members, on being introduced to return thanks, which they did with the most fulsome flattery, threw themselves on their knees,—an attitude her subjects generally assumed in her presence.

198. The Queen's melancholy encreased on being informed that the countess of Nottingham had been entrusted by Essex with a ring to deliver to her, and which she had been prevailed on by her husband, who was his enemy, to retain. This ring had been given him by Elisabeth on his return from the expedition to

Cadiz, with a promise, that, if at any time he should be in want of her protection, it would be granted, on his sending this mark of her affection. The countess was on her death-bed, when she made this declaration, and Elisabeth, overcome with grief at the intelligence, shook her violently, saying, "God may forgive you, but I never will." From that time she refused food, and lay for ten days and nights on the floor, supported by cushions, and venting her anguish in sighs and groans. On being requested to name a successor, she mentioned James of Scotland; and falling into a lethargy, she expired without a groan, in the seventieth year of her age, and forty-fifth of her reign.

199. Elisabeth possessed talents for governing, well suited to the circumstances under which she ascended the throne. Her vigilance, penetration, address, and perseverance; (with the assistance of the wise ministers and brave warriors, who owed their advancement to her discernment,) enabled her not only to maintain and encrease the prosperity and power of her subjects, but also to diminish that of her enemies, though they were the most powerful and enterprising princes of Europe. Her failings arose from excessive vanity and love of admiration, and an imperious temper.

200. Navigation was greatly encouraged during this reign. After three successful voyages to discover the north-west passage, Davis made a new attempt, and discovered the Straits which bear his name. In the year 1600, the first patent to the East India company was granted. The persecutions in France and the Netherlands brought many foreigners to England, who greatly improved the manufactures of the country. It was at that time the first Exchange was built, at the expense of Sir Thomas Gresham, for the reception of merchants. The Queen on visiting it, called it the Royal Exchange. Attempts were made to settle colonies in America,—one in Virginia, and another in Newfoundland; but neither proved at that time successful. Luxury of apparel encreased so much, that a

proclamation was issued, to restrain it; but to this the Queen's example was little conformable. Ever intent on exciting admiration, she appeared almost every day in a new and rich dress; and, at her death, her wardrobe contained about three thousand, which she had worn.

201. Learning was at this time held in high estimation; and ladies of rank frequently acquired a knowledge of the ancient as well as modern languages. Elisabeth was well acquainted with the Greek and Latin tongues, and wrote and translated several books. When the Reformation was introduced into the universities, the Spanish king, about the year 1581, founded a seminary at Douay, to which the English Catholics might send their children intended for the priesthood, to receive their education. The cardinal of Lorraine established another at Rheims; and these seminaries sent over every year, a number of priests, who maintained their religion in all its bigotry. They were under the direction of the Jesuits, who were devoted to the interests of the court of Rome. Various attempts were made to assassinate Elisabeth, which, however, were always discovered, before there was opportunity to execute them.

HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

FROM THE UNION OF ENGLAND AND SCOTLAND.

1603.] **JAMES I. of ENGLAND, & VI. of SCOTLAND,** [1625.

Was great grandson of Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry VII. His right to the crown was therefore unquestionable, and it never descended from father to son with less opposition, than it passed from the house of Tudor to that of Stuart. James had been, from infancy, king of Scotland, and was in his thirty-seventh year when he succeeded Elisabeth. On his journey from Edinburgh to London, all ranks flocked around him to express their satisfaction; but, though of an affectionate disposition, James was reserved in his manner, and disliked the bustle of such a concourse. This reserve his new subjects contrasted, to his disadvantage, with the affability Elisabeth was wont to display on such occasions.

2. From a desire to show his sense of their attachment, he conferred the honour of knighthood on no fewer than 237 persons. This, however, instead of giving satisfaction, excited disgust, from the want of discrimination displayed, and was regarded only as a proof of good-natured weakness. He arrived in London, May 17th, and was crowned at Westminster, July 25th, 1603. Embassadors from almost all the princes of Europe came

to congratulate him on his accession: the most distinguished was Rosni, afterwards duke of Sully, prime minister of Henry IV., with whom James entered into a treaty to protect the United States against Spain.

3. In the first year of this reign, a conspiracy was discovered to place on the throne Arabella Stuart, who was descended from Henry VII. in the same degree as James, and, after him, heir to the crown. This conspiracy is involved in mystery, as the persons engaged in it were of opposite principles. Among them was Sir Walter Raleigh: he and several others were condemned to death; some of whom were executed, and others were pardoned after their heads were on the block. Raleigh was relieved, and imprisoned for thirteen years.

4. In 1604, James was employed in dictating to an assembly of divines concerning points of faith and discipline; and a few alterations were made in the Liturgy. A conference was also held at Hampton court, in his presence, between some of the bishops and the leaders of the Puritans. He showed a preference to the established church, and a disposition to check the Puritans, as from them he expected the same opposition which he had constantly experienced from the Presbyterian clergy in Scotland; but, instead of reconciliation being effected by the conference, both parties separated with dissatisfaction.

5. The assembling of parliament had been long delayed by the plague, which had raged with such violence, that in London, which did not then contain more than 150,000 inhabitants, 30,000 died. On the opening of parliament James made a speech, which is said to have equaled any production of the age. The commons, who had been alarmed at the absolute authority exercised by Elisabeth, now made a spirited defence of their privileges, and also attempted to free trade from the restraints imposed on it. James had, of his own accord, annulled the numerous monopolies bestowed by his predecessor on individuals; *but the privileges granted to companies, which confined*

foreign trade in the hands of a few individuals, still remained; and a committee was appointed to examine into this grievance.

6. The union of the two kingdoms was zealously urged by the king, but all he could procure was the appointment of commissioners to deliberate on the terms. They discovered the same want of complaisance when the subject of supply was brought before them; and, to avoid a refusal, James sent to inform the house, that he desired no supply. He soon after prorogued parliament, having already had reason to complain of that encroaching spirit which proved fatal to his successor.

7. The Catholics had formed great expectations from James' accession to the throne; not only because he was the son of one whom they considered a martyr to their religion, but also because they had flattered themselves he was himself attached to it. His steady adherence to the Protestant faith, and strict observance of the laws enacted against the Catholics, so surprised and enraged them, that a conspiracy was formed for the destruction of king and parliament. The plan for accomplishing this, by blowing up the house of parliament, was conceived by Catesby, a gentleman of ancient family, and communicated to Percy, a descendant of the house of Northumberland, who readily entered into it, and agreed to make it known to some others. A house was hired adjoining that in which parliament met, and towards the end of the year 1604, they began their operations. They thought it a fortunate circumstance to get possession of a vault under the house of Lords, which was hired, as if to hold fuel. Thirty-six barrels of gunpowder were conveyed there, and covered with fagots and billets; and, to prevent suspicion, the doors were thrown open. The king, queen, and prince Henry, were expected to be present; Percy was to seize the duke, and the princess Elisabeth was to be proclaimed queen. As the day approached, every thing seemed to promise success to their plans, which, though known to twenty persons, had been kept

secret for a year and a half; and when neither remorse, pity, fear of punishment, nor hope of reward, had induced any of them to abandon or betray the enterprise, friendship was made the means of saving the nation.

8. Ten days before the time of meeting, Lord Mount-eagle, a Catholic, received a letter, warning him to absent himself from parliament. He considered it merely an attempt to frighten him; but providentially he showed it to the Secretary of State, who also thought lightly of it, yet thought proper to lay it before the king in council. The sagacity of James led him to conjecture, from some expressions used, that danger was to be apprehended from gunpowder, and orders were given to examine the vaults under the building. The search was delayed purposely till the day before meeting. The large piles of wood excited the suspicion of the earl of Suffolk, and the determined countenance of Fawkes, who stood in a dark corner, did not escape his notice. A more thorough search was made at midnight, and Fawkes, who had just completed his preparations, was seized at the door of the vault. Matches, and every thing necessary for firing the train, were found in his pockets; and, on throwing aside the fagots, the gunpowder was discovered. Fawkes was sent to the Tower, having scornfully refused to discover his accomplices; but, after some days' confinement, and being shown the rack, his courage failed, and he made a full confession. Some of the conspirators had fled to Warwickshire, and were surrounded in a house where they had assembled. Many of them were killed on the spot, and the rest suffered by the hand of the executioner.

9. The magnanimity of James never appeared more than in his speech to parliament after this narrow escape. He observed, that it would be unjust to involve all Catholics in the guilt of the conspiracy; that it would not make him in the least alter his plan of government; and that, while he punished guilt, he would protect innocence. This moderation was far from agreeable to his subjects;

whose animosity to the Catholics had greatly encreased, and the measures he used to support the authority of the established church in England, and to introduce prelacy into Scotland, were regarded by the Puritans as so many steps towards Popery.

10. James now directed his attention to the improvement of the condition of his Irish subjects; and proceeded with so much prudence and steadiness in this great work, that more was accomplished in nine years, than had been done for four centuries previously. He continued to urge the union with Scotland; but such was the national antipathy of the English parliament, that all that his efforts produced was the abolition of the hostile laws formerly existing between the kingdoms. Though James at this time possessed, in a good degree, the affection, and even esteem of his subjects, yet he had the mortification to be refused the necessary supply he had been obliged to request from parliament. He was destitute of the firmness by which Elisabeth had preserved her prerogative, while his ideas of sovereign authority were equally exalted: hence he was constantly involved in disputes with his parliament. The year 1610 was distinguished by the murder of Henry IV. by Ravallac. This event diminished, for some years, the glory of the French monarchy, which had rapidly encreased under his government; and Austria became again formidable to Europe.

11. In the following year the zeal of James was roused to remonstrate against the appointment of Vorstius, disciple of Arminius, to be professor of divinity in a Dutch university, and the states were obliged to deprive him of his chair, and banish him from their dominions. The sudden death of prince Henry, November 6th, 1612, occasioned universal regret; his great talents and virtues having excited the love and hopes of the nation: suspicions of poison had been entertained, but were found to be without foundation. The following year, the marriage of the princess Elisabeth with the Elector Palatine, was celebrated with much joy; but the alliance proved unfor-

fortunate. The Elector engaged in enterprises beyond his means, and James was unable to support him. He was defeated in the battle of Prague, and obliged to fly with his family to Holland. On hearing of the successes of the Catholics against the Protestants, murmurs and complaints of the king's neutrality became general. His indiscreet partiality to favourites also gave great offence to his subjects.

12. The first was Robert Carre, a Scotchman of good family, who was about twenty years of age, when introduced to the king's notice. He had no recommendation, but his external appearance, yet he soon became so much the object of the king's affection, that he heaped on him honours with an unsparing hand, till at last he attained the rank of earl of Somerset. Sir Thomas Overbury had been the tried friend of the favourite; but his prudent advice having given offence, Somerset, in revenge, procured a warrant to commit him to the Tower, debarred him from the sight of his nearest relatives; and, after six months' imprisonment, he was carried off by poison. The crime was not made known for some years, and when discovered, James could not bring himself to consign to merited punishment, one he had so tenderly loved. The accomplices suffered, but Somerset and his countess, who had been the instigator of the crime, were pardoned, and passed the remainder of their lives in infamy and obscurity; and in such hatred of each other, that they lived many years in the same house without holding any communication.

13. A new favourite, of similar rank and accomplishments to the first, had, for some time previous to the fall of Somerset, engaged the king's affection. Young Villiers first obtained the office of cup-bearer; and, in the course of a few years, was advanced to the rank of viscount, earl, marquis, and, at last, to that of duke of Buckingham, with many high offices of state. A train of needy relations were also raised to wealth and authority, and the discontent expressed at these instances of the king's

weakness, was increased by his severity towards Raleigh, who, after his return from an unsuccessful expedition to America, was beheaded, in consequence of a sentence formerly pronounced against him for treason, and for which he had already suffered thirteen years' imprisonment. Raleigh had been at one time very unpopular; but the sentiments of the nation had changed, and his death was regarded as a sacrifice to gain the favour of the court of Spain, which had complained of his hostilities against their settlements.

14. The intended marriage of the prince of Wales, with a princess of Spain, which had been long under negotiation, and which James was partial to, was extremely unacceptable to the nation. Buckingham's arrogance had occasioned a coldness between him and the prince, and, to ingratiate himself, he made the romantic proposal of his visiting in disguise the Spanish court, assuring him that Philip's gratitude for the confidence thus reposed in him, would induce him to conclude the treaty which had been so long delayed. The king reluctantly consented; the prince and Buckingham, with two attendants, passed through France undiscovered; and at Paris Charles saw Henrietta, whom he afterwards espoused. The character and behaviour of Charles gained the love and esteem of the Spaniards: every mark of honour was conferred on him, and the treaty was concluded which had been so long ardently desired; but Buckingham, aware of the odium he had incurred by his arrogance and impetuosity, determined, on leaving Spain, to break the treaty; and such was his ascendancy over the king, that he prevailed on him to abandon what had been for many years the object of his wishes. This rupture with Spain made Buckingham the favourite of the people, who were delighted with the prospect of going to war with that country; and, intoxicated with his popularity, he encouraged the schemes of the Puritans, for abolishing the order of bishops, and selling the dean and chapter-lands, to defray the expenses of the war.

15. Disappointed of an alliance with Spain, James entered on a negotiation with France, and a marriage-treaty was concluded between the Prince and Henrietta, daughter of Henry IV. An army was now sent to assist the Elector, in the recovery of the Palatine ; but, through mismanagement, they were so long prevented from landing, that sickness, brought on by confinement in the crowded vessels, carried off one half, and the rest were so weakened as to be unfit for service. The prospect of war had always been distressing to James, who ardently loved peace ; and this disaster deeply affected him. He was soon after seized with tertian ague ; and, finding himself much weakened, he sent for the prince, whom he exhorted to constancy in religion, to protect the church of England, and to extend his care to the family of the Elector. He then calmly prepared for death, and expired on the 27th March, 1625, in the fifty-ninth year of his age and the twenty-third of his reign over England. His pacific disposition, though it rendered his reign little illustrious, was greatly conducive to the prosperity of his subjects : yet no prince so inoffensive was ever more exposed to calumny. He possessed many virtues ; and his intentions were good, but more adapted to private life, than to the government of kingdoms. His queen, Anne of Denmark, had died in 1619 ; and he left only one son, Charles, who succeeded him ; and one daughter, Elisabeth, married to the Elector. For three centuries previous to the accession of the house of Stuart, the right of the sovereign of England to absolute and unlimited authority, had never been called in question. The liberty of the press was inconsistent with such principles of government ; and accordingly Elisabeth had prohibited, under severe penalties, the publication of any book or pamphlet, against any law of the realm, or against any commissions or prohibitions of her majesty. James extended the penalty to the importing of such books from abroad, and afterwards to the publishing of *any* book, without authority. He also imitated his predecessor in

discouraging the nobility and gentry from residing in London. This produced an effect contrary to what was intended; the riches amassed, and the influence acquired by their residence on their own property, rendered them formidable; and independent of the court. London was at this time almost entirely built of wood: the earl of Arundel introduced the building with brick.

16. The colonisation of America advanced during this reign. The money raised by the first lottery ever known in England was given in support of these settlements; and James, notwithstanding his antipathy to tobacco, permitted the importation of it, for the encouragement of the planters. Settlements in the Bermudas and in the island of Barbadoes were also made. Greenland was discovered about this period, and the whale-fishery successfully carried on. Various celebrated authors lived at this time; and James encouraged, by pensions, persons distinguished for science. The present translation of the Bible was made during this reign, and dedicated to the king.

1625.]

CHARLES I.

[1649.

17. Was twenty-five years of age when he ascended the throne. His amiable and exemplary conduct had endeared him to the nation; and, trusting to the sincerity of their professions in his favour, he was impatient for the assembling of parliament, to receive undoubted proofs of their attachment. The arrival of the princess Henrietta delayed the meeting till June, when they assembled at Westminster; and the house of Commons took the business of supply into consideration. They were aware that Charles was burdened with a large debt, contracted by his father, in prosecution of the war undertaken at their earnest request: they knew the difficulty and the vast expense of the enterprises in which they had engaged him, with promise of support, and yet, as if in mockery, they voted the altogether insufficient sum of £112,000. This conduct may in a great measure be attributed to

the influence of the Puritans, whose zeal for religion led them to desire civil liberty ; and they determined to take advantage of the king's necessities, to limit his prerogative. They were also excited by their hatred to Buckingham, who, secure of the king's favour, had abandoned their cause. Their dislike to the alliance with France was another motive.

18. Charles, on the other hand, was prepossessed in favour of the duke, whom he had lately heard extolled in parliament, as the deliverer of his country ; and he could not but regard, as cruel and perfidious, their refusal of support in the war in which they had involved him. However mild and unassuming his natural temper, he considered it a sacred duty to preserve undiminished, and to transmit to posterity, the prerogatives of his crown ; hence he regarded the attempt of the Commons to abridge his authority as little less than rebellion. Being obliged to dismiss parliament, on account of the plague, which again raged in London, he immediately assembled them at Oxford, and made a new attempt to obtain supply, condescending even to use entreaties ; but they remained inexorable, though it was well known that a fleet and army were lying at Portsmouth, in want of pay and provisions. They demanded the stricter execution of the penal laws against the Catholics, to the extreme rigour of which they knew Charles, though a determined Protestant, to be averse. Finding them resolved to grant no supply, he took advantage of the plague appearing in Oxford, to dissolve parliament.

19. Recourse was had to borrowing money from his subjects ; and by this means he with difficulty equipped the fleet for an expedition to Cadiz, which proving unsuccessful, loud murmurs were made against the court, and Charles was obliged to call a second parliament, February, 1626. A supply was now voted, which, though still insufficient, was only to be granted on condition of the king's complying with their demands. *Buckingham* was impeached, and the king was required to dis-

miss him. This he refused, imagining that his guilt consisted in being the friend and favourite of the king ; and that it would be an entire sacrifice of his honour and authority, if he granted such a triumph to his enemies, and a discouragement to his friends ; and as they were preparing to reduce him to entire dependence, by depriving him of the right of levying tonnage and poundage, without their consent, he determined immediately to dissolve parliament.

20. Charles now employed various expedients for the supply of his wants : assistance was sparingly contributed by the nobility, the city of London positively refused a loan required of them, and the exaction of ship-money created violent discontent. A farther supply of money became necessary, on account of the defeat of the king of Denmark, who had engaged in the war at the solicitation of Charles, and a general loan was levied in proportion to the assessment for last subsidy. Many resisted payment, and, by warrant of council, were thrown into prison. Another cause of complaint was the billeting of soldiers, contrary to custom, on private houses. The soldiers, ill-paid and undisciplined, committed many outrages, and all who had delayed, or refused the loans, were burdened with these unwelcome guests. Such exertions of prerogative were displeasing to all ; and the astonishment of the nation was great when Charles, already involved in war with the half of Europe, and destitute of treasure, prepared to attack France on no better grounds than a private quarrel between Buckingham and Richelieu, prime minister of France. The disgraceful failure of an expedition against that country intrusted to the duke, gave just cause of complaint.

21. There was now great reason to apprehend an insurrection, and to dread the assembling of parliament, yet it had become absolutely necessary to do so ; and, with a view to gain favour, Buckingham proposed in council the calling of a third parliament, which assembled, March 17th, 1628. They agreed to grant a larger sup-

ply, if the king consented to subscribe their Petition of Rights, in which forced loans, or benevolences, arbitrary imprisonment, martial law, billeting of soldiers, and taxation without consent of parliament, were declared illegal. After many delays, the royal assent was given, and received with universal acclamation. A new attack was made on Buckingham, and a remonstrance prepared, containing a recapitulation of all their grievances, and the errors of government. This return for the king's late concession, excited his indignation, and he suddenly prorogued the session, June 26th, to prevent the presenting of the remonstrance. The duke was soon after assassinated by one Felton, at Portsmouth. The failure of an enterprise in support of the Protestants of Rochelle diminished the king's authority in parliament, which re-assembled, 20th January, 1629. They renewed their complaints of public measures, and passed the Remonstrance framed in the former session, which occasioned their dissolution, March 10th.

22. Charles being now determined to govern without parliament, peace was made with France and Spain, and could he now have avoided dissensions with his subjects, he might have been respected and courted by every Power in Europe. He observed neutrality with regard to foreign affairs, except, to procure relief for the family of the Elector; and for this purpose he agreed to furnish 6000 men to assist the celebrated Gustavus, in his invasion of Germany; but the brilliant success of this hero, raised his ambitious views, and he refused to restore the Elector to his principality, except on condition of subjection. The negotiation was protracted till the battle of Lutzen, when Gustavus perished in the midst of victory.

23. Laud, bishop of London, now unhappily influenced Charles to insist on a stricter observance of the rites of the church of England; and the revival of what, in any degree, resembled its ceremonies was considered as a return to the Romish church. The Puritans, restrained at home, went in numbers to America, till prevented by

government. Eight ships, ready to sail from the Thames, were detained; and, among those on board, were John Hampden, afterwards one of the chief supporters of the Republican cause, and Oliver Cromwell, who became Protector. The discontent expressed by the establishment of Episcopacy in England did not deter Charles from attempting it in Scotland. Intimation had been given, that the Liturgy would be read in St Giles's, Edinburgh, July 23d, 1637: but no sooner was the service commenced than a tumult was raised, chiefly by women of the lower ranks, which made it impossible to proceed. A stool was thrown at the bishop, the magistrates were insulted, and it was with difficulty the rabble were forced out. All ranks now united in opposing the innovation. Popery and the Liturgy were represented as the same, and renounced in the Covenant, which was speedily signed without distinction of rank, age, or sex. The Covenanters rejected every concession made by Charles; an assembly was held at Glasgow, by which Episcopacy was declared unlawful, and all were ordered to sign the Covenant on pain of excommunication.

24. They now prepared to defend it by force of arms; and seized some castles belonging to the king. Leith was fortified, numbers of men, and even women of rank, engaging zealously in the work. Charles reluctantly raised an army to subdue this refractory spirit; he had advanced to Berwick, May, 1639, attended by many of the nobility; but averse to shed the blood of his subjects, he made overtures of peace, and withdrew his army.

25. The war was renewed the following year. The king, with difficulty, collected an army; but found he had not the means to support them. A fourth parliament was called, after an interval of eleven years from the former one, which, showing the same spirit of opposition, was hastily dissolved. By various expedients, the necessary supply was raised, and the armies advanced to the borders; a detachment of English having disputed the passage of the Tyne at Newburn, was routed by the

Covenanters, who took possession of Newcastle, and sent messengers to York, where the king had arrived. Contrary to the advice of Strafford, he concluded a new treaty at Rippon, and consented to call another parliament, which was his last. It was called the long parliament, and met, November 3d, 1640. Their first act was to impeach Strafford and Laud; the former was brought to trial; and though, in a noble speech, he confuted the accusations of his enemies, he was pronounced guilty of treason. The king tenderly loved Strafford, and tried every expedient to save him, which only encreased the clamour of his enemies for his destruction. Juxon alone advised Charles not to give assent to what his conscience disapproved. While in this state of perplexity, he received a letter from Strafford, beseeching him to consent to his death, for the sake of public peace; and, in despair of quieting, by any other means, the tumult of the people, he at last granted a commission to sign the fatal bill,—an action for which he felt grief and remorse to his latest hour. In the agony of grief for Strafford's doom, he consented to (what proved still more fatal to his authority) sign a bill which had been rapidly passed, that parliament should not be dissolved or prorogued, without their own consent. Strafford suffered in 1641, in the forty-ninth year of his age; and displayed on the scaffold the greatest dignity and elevation of mind. He said he feared the omen, for the intended reformation of the state was bad, which commenced with shedding innocent blood. Parliament then proceeded to abolish the courts of High Commission and the Star-chamber, and thus to annihilate what was most dangerous in the royal prerogative. It was during this year that the princess Mary, only ten years of age, was betrothed and afterwards married to William of Nassau, only son of the prince of Orange.

26. Charles had promised to visit Scotland, and arrived August 14th, 1641, with the full intention of giving satisfaction to his subjects in that kingdom. He conformed to the presbyterian mode of worship, bestowed pensions

on some of their most popular preachers, and used every method to soften the enmity that existed towards him. While thus employed, and preparing to return with the same conciliatory designs to England, he received information of a rebellion in Ireland, which had been attended with much bloodshed and devastation. The animosity of the Irish catholics against the English settled amongst them, had been subdued, but not extinguished by the prudent administration of James; and they thought the commotions then prevailing in England afforded a good opportunity to expel those who had deprived them of their possessions, and suppressed their religion. A general insurrection was projected; assistance from France was promised by Richelieu; the castle of Dublin, which was only defended by fifty men, was to be surprised on the day fixed for revolt; two of the leaders, More and Macguire, had arrived in Dublin; and every thing seemed to promise success to the plot, when it was discovered by Conolly, an Irish protestant, the night before it was to have been put in execution. This discovery was however too late to prevent the intended insurrection. O'Neale, another of the leaders, had taken arms in Ulster, and a massacre of the English had commenced, in which incredible enormities were perpetrated. The humanity of More was shocked at the exercise of such wanton cruelty; and finding that his authority, which had been sufficient to excite the insurrection, was too weak to restrain their ferocity, he abandoned a cause polluted by such brutalities. The gates of Dublin were opened to receive the wretched sufferers who had escaped the general massacre; but many of these did not long survive the loss of their friends and fortune. By the most moderate computation, the number of those who perished amounted to forty thousand.

27. Charles expected that the zeal of the Scots against Popery would have induced them instantly to fly to the relief of their Protestant brethren in Ireland; but in this he was disappointed, and also in his application to the

English parliament for assistance to subdue the Irish rebellion. They insinuated that he had himself fomented it. The republican spirit now openly appeared, and showed a determination to overthrow the royal authority, and to subvert those laws they had undertaken to defend. The nobility attempted to restrain the encroachments of the Commons; but these were become too powerful to be intimidated, and they instigated the populace against the bishops to such a degree, that they were obliged to absent themselves from the house, to avoid the insult and danger to which they were exposed in going and returning.

28. The king, finding that his concessions only increased the demands of his enemies, now gave way to the resentment he had long suppressed, and gave orders to accuse five leaders of the popular party of treason, and demanded, by his sergeant-at-arms, that they should be delivered up. This not being complied with, Charles went to the house next day, to seize them; but found they had escaped. In this perplexity, he called a meeting of the common council, who treated him with the greatest contempt; and on leaving them, one of the populace called out, "To your tents, O Israel!"—the expression used by the Israelites, when they abandoned Rehoboam. Parliament took advantage of this rash act of the king, to excite still farther the fury of the people, reducing to the lowest ebb the king's authority, and extending their own. The queen being threatened with impeachment, prepared to leave the country. They obliged the king to appoint persons of their choosing, to all situations of trust; but on their desiring to have command of the army, he exclaimed, "No; not for an hour." This refusal brought matters to extremity; and Charles, aware of his danger, removed to York, where he found the nobility and gentry ready to support him. Both parties now prepared for the contest, which seemed inevitable; but each desired to throw the odium of commencing civil war on the other. Parliament had command of the forces

aised for the defence of Ireland, and their numbers were daily encreased, with the intention of being employed against the king. The queen, by disposing of the crown-jewels, procured a supply of arms and ammunition in Holland, part of which was, not without difficulty, forwarded to the king. His situation was now such as to require very exertion for his defence: the resources of his genius seemed to encrease with his difficulties, and he never appeared greater than in this time of danger and distress. His political conduct and the situation of affairs had procured him inveterate enemies; his many virtues had gained him zealous friends; and between the hatred of the one and the affection of the other, the nation was violently agitated.

29. To preclude the possibility of agreement, parliament proposed terms, such as would have left to Charles the name without any of the authority of a king. Having therefore no other resource, he collected some forces, and erected the royal standard at Nottingham, August 25th, 1642. Never did a contest seem more unequal. Besides having seized all the magazines of arms and ammunition, parliament had caused to be intercepted the greater part of those sent by the Queen. London, and all the sea-ports, except Newcastle, was in their hands; and they employed, for their own use, the king's revenues. The only advantage possessed by Charles, arose from the zeal and bravery of his adherents; but their numbers were far inferior to the enemy, and he thought it prudent to retire to Shrewsbury. From Wellington he issued a declaration of his desire and intention to defend the Protestant religion, and the liberty of his subjects, pleading the necessity by which he had been engaged in civil war.

30. The first blood shed in this quarrel was before the gates of Worcester, where some of the parliament's cavalry were attacked by prince Rupert, (son of the Elector, and nephew of the king) their leader slain, and the whole party routed. A battle ensued at Edge-hill, on the 23rd

October, with equal loss to both parties. About five thousand fell. Having taken Banbury, Charles proceeded to Oxford, the city most devoted to his cause. He summoned the members of parliament who adhered to him to meet there. The house of peers was more numerous; but the house of commons not half the number that usually assembled at Westminster. They granted some supply, and preparations were again made on both sides to renew hostilities. Charles obtained some re-enforcement from Ireland, and parliament made an alliance with the Scots, who, not satisfied with the establishment of Presbyterian discipline in their own country, ardently desired to introduce it throughout the kingdom. For this purpose the solemn League and Covenant was framed, in which they bound themselves to endeavour to extirpate Popery and Prelacy, and to preserve the reformed religion of the Church of Scotland. This was subscribed by the English parliament, though some of the members were attached to the hierarchy; but all scruples were laid aside, to obtain the assistance of the Scottish nation, and they ordered the Covenant to be received by all under their authority. At this time an Assembly met at Westminster, who made alterations in the thirty-nine articles, abolished the Liturgy, and established in its place a directory for worship agreeable to the Puritans. They next proceeded to an act of the greatest tyranny and injustice, in the trial and execution of Archbishop Laud. This aged prelate, who had been some years in confinement, had always expressed his apprehensions of a violent death; but his fears vanished before he came to consider it, and his behaviour on the scaffold was worthy of the character he had maintained through life. The Liturgy was publicly abolished on the day of his death, and the citizens of London, and the Scottish army, returned thanks for the happy change introduced in the form of worship.

31. The first great defeat of the royalists was at Marston Moor, where a battle was fought, 3d July, 1644. It was on this occasion that the military talents of Crom-

well brought him into notice. Sir Thomas Fairfax, who was appointed general of the forces, in the room of Essex, and received his commission in the name of the parliament alone, was entirely under the direction of Cromwell, who proceeded to new-model the army, which now consisted chiefly of independents,—a sect which desired not only to abolish all ecclesiastical government, but to establish entire equality of rank. The officers performed the duties of chaplains, and during the intervals of action engaged in prayer and giving exhortations. Their zealous harangues were mistaken for divine illumination; the private soldiers felt the same excitement; and when marching to battle, the field resounded with the singing of psalms, as well as with military music. During this time the earl of Montrose, with a small and ill armed force, obtained several victories over the Covenanters in Scotland, at Perth, Aberdeen, Inverlochy, Inverness and Kilsyth. The battle of Naseby, which decided the fate of Charles, took place on the 14th June, 1645. The courage and prudence of Cromwell in a great measure achieved the victory; about five thousand of the royalists were made prisoners, and Charles was forced off the field, leaving his artillery and baggage in the hands of the enemy. His cabinet was seized, and copies of his letters to the Queen were published by order of parliament. The Queen had returned to England, but, apprehending danger in Oxford, had fled to Exeter, from which she might more easily escape to France.

32. After the battle of Naseby, Charles retired, first to Hereford, and then to Wales, with the vain hope of raising infantry; but disasters seemed to attend his affairs in all quarters, and he was obliged, with the remains of his army, to take refuge in Oxford, which had always remained faithful to him. From this he made various overtures for peace, without any effect, several of his messages not even receiving an answer. Charles was at this time more the object of compassion than at any period of his life, being harassed by the murmurs of dis-

contented officers, and tortured with the reflection of what the attachment of his friends would subject them to. Hearing that Fairfax was approaching with a powerful army to besiege Oxford, and dreading to fall into the hands of insolent enemies, he came to the resolution of throwing himself on the protection of the Scottish nation. He left Oxford in the night, accompanied by Dr Hudson and Mr Ashburnham; and, on the road, passed for Ashburnham's servant. Parliament, on hearing of his escape, issued orders, threatening with death whoever harboured or concealed him.

33. Charles had soon reason to regret having trusted the Scots: he found himself a prisoner, and excluded from all communication with his friends. The English parliament were informed of his arrival at the Scottish camp at Newark, and a treaty was entered into for delivering him up to them. After various discussions, it was agreed, that the Scots should receive £400,000 as the sum due for former services, on condition of their giving up the king to his avowed enemies. By this action the nation incurred an indelible stain. The king, being delivered over to the English commissioners, was conducted, under a guard, to Holdenby in Northampton. The people flocked to behold him, partly from curiosity, but more from affection, and the superstitious desire to obtain the king's touch for scrofulous diseases, encreased from the tenderness felt towards the unhappy monarch. His confinement at Holdenby was very rigorous: his servants were dismissed, and all communication even with his family prevented. He earnestly requested the attendance of his chaplains; but this also was refused. The prince of Wales had, in compliance with his father's wishes, joined the Queen in Paris.

34. Parliament now wished to disband the army; but was opposed by Cromwell, who intended, by their means, to get the power into his own hands. For this purpose, he resolved to seize the king's person; and, on the 3d June, 1647, a party of 500 horse were ordered to convey him

to the head-quarters of the army. Cromwell was invested with the command of the army, and marched to London: and now commenced the encroachments of the military on the civil authority. Parliament was obliged to submit: the greatest commotions prevailed; one party adhering to the citizens, another to the army. The king hoped to regain his power by the struggles of the contending parties, both of whom privately treated with him; and he enjoyed a greater degree of freedom than when at Holdenby. His friends were allowed access to him, and his children permitted to spend a few days with him at Caversham. Cromwell, who witnessed the meeting of the royal family, confessed he had never been present at so affecting a scene. The army, having been victorious over parliament and the city, ventured to bring Charles to reside at Hampton-court. The respect with which he had been treated by the army diminished, as they acquired authority: he soon became sensible that his life was in danger, and resolved to leave the kingdom. On the 11th November, he privately left Hampton-court with three attendants, traveled all night through the forest, and arrived next day at Titchfield, where the countess dowager of Southampton resided. Disappointed of obtaining a vessel, he threw himself on the protection of Hammond, governor of the isle of Wight. This man was devoted to Cromwell, and Charles was obliged to accompany him to Carisbrook castle, where, though received with apparent respect, he was in reality a close prisoner. No step that Charles had ever taken was so agreeable to his enemies as this, which in the issue proved fatal to him.

35. Cromwell, now master of the parliament, and freed from anxiety about the custody of the king, applied himself to quell the disorders which he had himself raised in the army, and had successfully employed against both king and parliament. The arrogance which he had encouraged in the inferior officers and privates, was now displayed in seditious remonstrances; and it required the bold and dextrous hand of Cromwell, to prevent anarchy

and confusion. He called a private meeting of the principal officers, at Windsor, at which the proposal to bring the king to trial was first made. They knew that, while he lived, there would be no end to conspiracies in his favour; and they determined to compel parliament to adopt their views, or to offer no resistance to their barbarous intentions. Ninety-one members had the courage to oppose; and it was then declared treason to hold any intercourse with the king, without the consent of parliament. Charles had agreed to all their demands, except on two points,—the abolishing of Episcopacy, and giving up his friends; but his enemies had determined on his ruin, and nothing else would satisfy them.

36. The Scots, now ashamed of their conduct, made a last effort in defence of their sovereign, and advanced to England under the duke of Hamilton. Cromwell hastened to oppose him, and obtained a decided victory, Aug. 1648, at Preston. Hamilton was taken prisoner, and his followers slain or dispersed. Cromwell then marched into Scotland; and, having subdued the party favourable to the king, gave the power into the hands of Argyle, it being agreed that Berwick and Carlisle should be delivered to Cromwell. During his absence from London, parliament had endeavoured to conclude the treaty with the king; but, on his return, he expressed his dissatisfaction, and gave orders again to seize the king, and convey him to Hurst Castle. The parliament, however, continued to resist; and, after a violent debate of three days, a majority of 129 against 83 declared that the concessions made by the king were sufficient foundation on which to proceed with the settlement of the kingdom. Cromwell now showed his determination to force submission to his will. Next day, December 6th, none were allowed to enter but the most furious of the Independents, not exceeding sixty; all the others were forcibly excluded by Colonel Pride, at the head of two regiments, and confined till their vote was reversed, and the concessions of the king declared unsatisfactory. They now prepared to

add to their guilt the infamy of regicides: a vote was passed, declaring it treason in a king to levy forces against his parliament, and appointing a high court of justice to try Charles for this alledged crime. This vote was sent to the house of peers, which happened that day to be fuller than usual, and was rejected by them without a dissenting voice: they at the same time adjourned for ten days, hoping thus to retard the furious and bloody designs of the house of Commons. They were not however to be deterred from their purpose, and declared the concurrence of the house of Lords to be unnecessary, the people being the origin of all just power.

37. Colonel Harrison was sent with a strong party to conduct the king to London. At Windsor, Hamilton was admitted to the king's presence, and, falling on his knees, exclaimed, "My dear master!"—"I have, indeed, been so to you," said Charles, embracing him. All who obtained a sight of him were affected at the striking change produced in his appearance by the many sorrows and privations to which he had been subjected. Great preparations were made for this extraordinary trial. Bradshaw was appointed president, and Coke solicitor for the people of England. The court sat in Westminster-hall, and consisted of 133 persons, but seldom more than 70 assembled, so difficult was it to engage men of any respectability in so criminal a measure. When the name of Fairfax was called, one of the spectators cried aloud, "He has more wit than be here"; and again, when the charge against the king was read in the name of the people of England, the same voice exclaimed, "Not a tenth part of them." On orders being given to fire into the box whence the voice proceeded, it was discovered, that it was lady Fairfax who had spoken. She had long stimulated her husband's zeal against the royal cause, but was now shocked, as well as he, at the fatal consequence of his victories.

38. Charles, who, under all the vicissitudes of fortune, had maintained his equanimity of temper; now,

when presented as a criminal, sustained the dignity of a monarch. The Solicitor, in the name of the Commons, impeached the king as a tyrant, traitor, murderer, and an enemy to the Commonwealth. With great temper and dignity he declined the authority of the court; acknowledged that he had a sacred trust,—the liberties of his people, committed to him, which he would not betray, by recognising a power founded on violence and usurpation;—that he did not need to take shelter under the maxim, That a king can do no wrong, but was able to justify the measures in which he had engaged, and to prove the integrity of his conduct, which he was desirous of doing, if called on in another manner. Three times was he brought before the court, and as often declined its authority. On being brought for the fourth and last time, the soldiers were instigated to call aloud for—Justice,—Execution. Some of them, with brutal insolence, spit in his face, to which he patiently submitted. Others could not forbear uttering wishes for his preservation, and he expressed his gratitude for their affection. One soldier implored a blessing on him, for which his officer beat him to the ground. “The punishment, methinks, exceeds the offence,” was the remark made by Charles.

39. The judges having examined witnesses, who proved that the king had taken arms against the forces commissioned by parliament, he was condemned, and only three days granted him to prepare for execution. As soon as the intention of trying the king was known, the French court, by their ambassador, and also the Dutch interposed in his behalf; the Scots exclaimed against the violence used.—Pathetic letters were addressed to parliament by the queen and prince; but all was in vain. Four of Charles’ friends, Richmond, Hertford, Southampton, and Lindsay, represented, that, being the king’s counselors, they had concurred in the measures now imputed to their master as crimes, that they alone in the eye of the law were guilty, and willingly offered themselves to save that precious life which it was the duty of

every subject to protect. This generous offer was also unavailing. After sentence was pronounced, Charles was conveyed to Whitehall, and the princess Elisabeth and the duke of Gloucester, all of his family that remained in England, were admitted to see him. The misfortunes of her family had made a deep impression on the princess, and Charles endeavoured to console her, and gave her many pious advices. Taking the young duke on his knee, he said, "Mark, child, what I say to thee: they will cut off my head, and perhaps make thee a king; but mark what I say; you must not be made a king by them, so long as your brothers Charles and James are alive." The child, sighing, said, "I will be torn in pieces first." Charles spent most of the time in devotion, and slept as sound as usual, though the noise of the workmen erecting the scaffold constantly resounded in his ears. On the morning of the fatal day, he rose early; and, calling one of his attendants, bade him take more than usual care in preparing him for so joyful a solemnity.

40. The scaffold was erected in the street before Whitehall, in view of the palace, that the triumph of the populace over majesty might the more conspicuously appear. Charles calmly surveyed the solemn preparations; and, as he could not hope to be heard by the people, who were kept at a distance by the soldiers surrounding the scaffold, he addressed himself to those about him, declaring his innocence in the late fatal wars; that he had not taken up arms till after parliament had levied forces against him; and that his sole intention in doing so was to defend the authority transmitted to him. He expressed his attachment to the Protestant religion; forgave all his enemies, and exhorted them to restore the peace of the kingdom, by returning to their allegiance to their lawful sovereign, his son. He observed, that his having permitted an unjust sentence to take effect, was now punished by an unjust sentence on himself. When preparing for the block, Bishop Juxon, who attended to pay the last duties to his friend and sovereign, said,

"There is, sire, but one stage more, which, though turbulent, is a very short one, and will soon carry you a great way,—from earth to heaven." "I go," replied the king, "from a corruptible to an incorruptible crown, where no disturbance can have place." At one blow, his head was severed from his body, and, streaming with blood, held up by the executioner, who cried out, "This is the head of a traitor."

41. The spectators and the whole nation, when informed of the melancholy event, were overwhelmed with grief and indignation; and all accused themselves of disloyalty, in having either acted against, or neglected to defend their sovereign. Even the pulpits, which had resounded with anathemas against him, were now bedewed with tears for his unhappy fate. All detested the hypocrisy of his murderers,—a glaring instance of which was shown the day of the king's death. Cromwell and Ireton being informed that Fairfax had persuaded his regiment to attempt the rescue of the king, endeavoured to persuade him that he had been rejected by God, and exhorted him to seek direction by prayer, concealing from him that they had already signed the warrant for his execution. Harrison was appointed to join with him in prayer, which he prolonged, by agreement, till the fatal blow was struck. It had been observed that, before laying his head on the block, Charles had said to Juxon, "Remember." The generals insisted on being informed of the king's meaning; and Juxon told them, that, having been frequently charged by the king to inculcate on his son, the forgiveness of his murderers, he had taken the last opportunity of repeating this desire.

42. Charles was executed on the 30th January, 1649, in the forty-ninth year of his age, and twenty-fourth of his reign. He was of middle stature, and well proportioned, and his countenance pleasing, though of a melancholy aspect. He possessed many virtuous and amiable qualities, and a large share of good sense,—the advantage of which he often lost by his deference to the opinions of

others. He was better fitted to rule in an established government, than to yield to or resist the encroachments which, unfortunately for him, were made on his authority during the whole of his reign. Exposed without revenue, without arms, to the assault of furious and bigoted factions, the most fatal consequences resulted from his smallest error; and it is difficult, even after the event, to determine what conduct could have extricated him from his perilous situation, and preserved the peace of the nation.

43. The publication of the *Eicon Basiliké*, a few days after the execution, encreased, in a great degree, the sympathy and admiration of the people, and it passed through fifty editions in a twelvemonth. Independent of the interest it excited as the production of their injured sovereign, and of the piety and meekness it expressed, it was the best composition in prose, to be found at that time in the English language, and altogether unlike the style of Dr Gauden, to whom the enemies of Charles wished to ascribe it. After the execution, the king's statue in the Exchange was thrown down, and these words inscribed on the pedestal; *Exit Tyrannus, regum ultimus*. The commons intended to apprentice the princess Elisabeth to a button-maker, and the duke of Gloucester to some trade; but the princess died soon after at Carisbrook castle of grief for her father's death, and the duke was sent by Cromwell out of the country. Soon after the king's death, the Commons proceeded to abolish the house of Lords, as dangerous and useless; the same was decreed with regard to monarchy; and it was made treason to proclaim, or in any way acknowledge as heir to the throne, Charles Stuart, commonly called Prince of Wales. All public acts were to run in the name of The keepers of the liberties of England; and, on a new great seal was engraven, "The first year of freedom by God's blessing restored, 1649."

1649.]

THE COMMONWEALTH.

[1660.]

44. The great support of the republican party, in the confusions following the death of Charles, was a

numerous army, and the unbounded influence of CROMWELL. He vigorously suppressed the tumults arising from the fanatical spirit he had himself promoted, and, unembarrassed by difficulties, steadily pursued his ambitious designs. As soon as affairs were somewhat settled in England, he went to Dublin, August 15th, to prosecute the war against the Royalists. Tredah, a fort in the neighbourhood of Dublin, was taken after great opposition; and, to terrify other garrisons from resistance, he adopted the barbarous policy of putting all to the sword. Almost every town surrendered at his approach, and in less than nine months the country was nearly subdued. Cromwell encouraged the Irish to go into foreign service; and above 40,000 left the island. On his return to London, he received the thanks of parliament for his services, and was appointed General of the forces to be sent against Scotland.

45. Charles had been proclaimed in Scotland, and invited over; but on such humiliating terms as nothing but his necessities could have induced him to accept. He arrived in the frith of Cromarty, June 23d, 1650, and, before being permitted to land, he was required to sign the Covenant: his friends were separated from him, and he soon found, that he was at the mercy of those who sought to annihilate his authority, and degrade his dignity. Cromwell entered Scotland with an army of 16,000, and obtained a complete victory, September 3d, in the battle of Dunbar. He took possession of Edinburgh and Leith; but the approach of winter, and his being seized with ague, hindered farther conquest. Charles was crowned at Scone, January 1st, 1651; but, though treated with some show of respect, he was in reality a prisoner, and subjected to the continual remonstrances and reprimands of the clergy. The Scottish army again assembled under Hamilton and Leslie; Charles was allowed to join them, and encamped at the Torwood, near Stirling. Cromwell having in vain attempted to bring them to an engagement, passed round by the frith of Forth, and at-

tacked them behind with great slaughter. Charles, in despair, persuaded his generals to march into England, where he expected many would flock to his standard, and an army of 14,000 advanced south by rapid journeys. Cromwell followed with all expedition, and overtook Charles at Worcester, before his friends had time to join him. With an army of 30,000, he attacked the Royalists, September 3d, who, unable to resist so superior a force, were slain or taken prisoners, and the streets were covered with the dead. The king gave proofs of great valour, but was obliged to fly, about six in the afternoon, and traveled twenty-six miles without halting. After wandering in various disguises for six weeks, undergoing great hardships, and being exposed to the most imminent dangers, he embarked in a small vessel at Shoreham, Sussex, and arrived safely at Fescamp in Normandy. Hereceived, during his concealment, daily proofs of uncorrupted fidelity: forty persons, of various ranks, resisted the temptation of the reward offered for his discovery, and protected him at the hazard of their lives,—death being threatened to any who should conceal him. At one time he was concealed in the branches of an oak for twenty-four hours, while he saw the soldiers passing in search of him, and expressing their wish to seize him.

46. Scotland and Ireland, being now subdued, were treated as conquered provinces. Ireton, Cromwell's son-in-law, who had been left in Ireland with a numerous army, to prevent revolt, took Limerick, which had still remained in the hands of the Irish, and died there of the plague soon after. Cromwell and the republicans, who reposed great confidence in him, were much affected by his death; and, to show their regard for his services, he was honoured with a magnificent public funeral, and an estate of £2000 a year was bestowed on his family. Monk had successfully prosecuted the war in Scotland. Stirling castle, though well provided for defence, soon surrendered. He there obtained the records of the kingdom, which were sent to England. Dundee was carried

by assault; and, following the example of Cromwell in Ireland, the garrison and the inhabitants were put to the sword, to terrify others into submission. Aberdeen, St Andrews, Inverness, and other towns yielded to the enemy. Argyle submitted to the Commonwealth; and, with the exception of a few Royalists, who remained in the mountains, all were reduced to subjection, to which the prudent conduct of Monk served much to reconcile them.

47. In 1652, war was declared against Holland. The murder of the ambassador from parliament, by the Royalists, which was thought not to have been sufficiently resented, and the barbarous treatment of the English at Amboyna, which thirty years' silence seemed to have buried in oblivion, were made the grounds of complaint. Many engagements took place between Blake the English, and Van Tromp the Dutch admiral. The most furious one commenced in the Channel, February 18th, 1653, and was obstinately continued for three days. Blake was the victor; but the Dutch admiral gained equal honour by a skillful retreat. The losses of the Dutch by war were small, in comparison of the injury their trade sustained from the English, and they sued for peace; but not obtaining any cessation of hostilities, and their commerce being entirely interrupted by the English fleet, they equipped some larger vessels, and Tromp determined to die rather than again yield. He met the enemy commanded by Monk, July 29th, and, while animating his men, was shot through the heart. This event decided the battle in favour of the English, about thirty ships of the Dutch being taken or sunk.

48. Cromwell, finding that parliament had become jealous of, and wished to restrain his authority, came to the daring resolution of dissolving it; and, for this purpose, he used means to widen the breach between them and the army, where he knew many would support his measures from hopes of advancement. Being informed that *parliament* had determined not to dissolve themselves,

but to fill up the vacancies, he, in a rage, hastened to the house, 10th April, with three hundred soldiers. Having sit for some time hearing the debate, he said, he had come to do a thing which grieved him to the soul, but, for the good of the nation, he must do it. He sat down again; then, starting up, he loaded the members with the vilest reproach; and stamping his foot, which was the signal for the soldiers to enter, he said, "Get you gone, you are no longer a parliament: the Lord has done with you." Then, commanding the hall to be cleared, he went out last, and having locked the doors, returned to Whitehall. In this violent manner was the celebrated Long Parliament, which, for some doubtful encroachments on their privileges, had dethroned and murdered a virtuous monarch, descended from a long line of sovereigns, subdued by the fraud and violence of an individual, whose name, a few years before, was unknown to the nation: and so little indignation was excited by his usurpation, that he received addresses of congratulation, the first of the kind, from the fleet, the army, and from different public bodies throughout the kingdom.

49. Cromwell now possessed absolute authority; and, that he might retain it, he summoned a parliament, consisting chiefly of the lowest and most ignorant of the people. They met, July 4th, and proceeded to exercise the authority with which Cromwell had invested them. The suppression of the Clergy, of the Universities, and of the Courts of Justice was taken into consideration. The two former were considered unnecessary; and, for the latter, the Mosaic law was to be substituted. Such schemes soon drew upon them public derision: even Cromwell was ashamed of their proceedings, but he had taken care to have some among them devoted to his interests. These met early on December 12th, and having observed that their sitting longer would be of no service to the nation, they hastened with Rouse, the speaker, to restore their authority to Cromwell. It was then proposed, in council, to adopt another plan of government,

and to appoint a person with authority over the Commonwealth, with the title of *Protector*. Into this high office Cromwell was, with great solemnity installed, professing to accept the dignity in order to preserve the peace of the nation, which was now indeed in such a state, that the exertion of high authority was become necessary to prevent them relapsing into bloodshed and confusion. Cromwell was to retain for life the office which invested him with royal authority, and his successor was to be appointed by the council. He chose his council from among his officers; and of such opposite principles, as made it unlikely they would ever combine against him; to each he gave a pension of £1000 a year; and, as his chief support was in the army, he took care they should be liberally paid.

50. Peace with Holland was at last signed by Cromwell, April, 1654, the Dutch agreeing to yield to the English the honour of the flag, to pay £85,000 for losses sustained by the East India Company, and to restore a part of the dominions of which that company had been dispossessed. A new parliament was summoned, 3d September, which consisted of 400 members for England, 30 for Scotland, and the same number for Ireland, and they used the greatest liberty in censuring the character and administration of Cromwell. Surprised and enraged at this refractory spirit, Cromwell obliged the members to sign a recognition of his authority; and placed guards to prevent any but subscribers from entering. Learning that conspiracies were forming against him, he hastily dissolved the assembly. In March, 1655, an insurrection of the Royalists took place, and the king was proclaimed in Salisbury; but such was the terror of the government then established, that the Royalists could obtain no accession of forces, and were easily made prisoners. The leaders were capitally punished, and the others sent to Barbadoes, as slaves.

51. Mazarin, who had succeeded Richelieu as prime minister of France, carefully cultivated the favour of the

Protector, and the greatest deference was paid to his most imperious demands. The Queen of England and her son Charles, though so nearly connected with the royal family of France, received little support from them, yet even that little being resented by the English parliament, the French ministry found it necessary to affect such indifference, that Charles retired to Cologne, to prevent the indignity of being desired to leave the kingdom. The Queen had a small pension from the French court; but it was so ill paid, that she told the Cardinal de Retz, one morning, when he waited on her, that her daughter the princess Henrietta was obliged to remain in bed for want of fire to warm her. To such destitution was a Queen of England, daughter of Henry IV. of France, reduced, in the capital of her father's empire. The court of Spain also made advances to obtain the friendship of the Protector, but his ambition was excited by the hopes of conquests in their extensive empire in the West Indies, which might render illustrious his usurped dominion. He accordingly equipped two squadrons, one of which, commanded by Admiral Pen, made an unsuccessful attempt on St Domingo. To atone for this disappointment they bent their course to Jamaica, which surrendered to them, and has ever since remained in the hands of the English: but of so little importance was this valuable acquisition considered, that Pen, and Venables who commanded the soldiers, were on their return sent to the Tower by Cromwell, so much inferior had been their success to his high expectations. The other squadron was sent into the Mediterranean under Blake; and as no English fleet, except during the Crusades, had ever appeared there, their success spread the renown of British valour over Europe;—no force, Christian or Mahometan, being able to resist them.

52. The Spaniards declared war against England in 1656, and seized all the goods and vessels of the English merchants, who had carried on a profitable commerce with Spain. Blake received orders to renew hostilities, and

succeeded in destroying many of their vessels, and in taking much treasure ; the last action in which he engaged was attacking a rich Spanish fleet in the bay of Santa Cruz. It was an attempt attended with the greatest danger, but the Spaniards were obliged to yield, and abandon their treasure, which was consumed with their vessels. Blake died as he came within sight of his native land, and the Protector ordered him a pompous funeral. Cromwell had entered into alliance with France, as soon as Spain declared war against him, and sent over 6000 men to assist the French army, commanded by Turenne, in attacking the Spanish dominions in the Netherlands. Dunkirk was besieged, and surrendered, after an engagement, in which the Spaniards were totally defeated, and it was by agreement delivered to Cromwell. During these transactions the greatest friendship and regard was professed between Louis XIV. and the Protector ; and lord Falconbridge, Cromwell's son-in-law, was received by the French court with the respect shown to princes.

53. In 1657 the crown was offered to Cromwell, and pressed on his acceptance by a majority of the parliament ; but this, which was the object of his most ardent desire, he was obliged to decline, from the opposition made by many of his firmest adherents, and from dread of its occasioning mutiny in the army. The following year, parliament consisting, as in times of monarchy, of two houses, assembled January 20th. * A great majority of the Commons declared against Cromwell, and would not acknowledge the jurisdiction of the other house he had established. The Protector, dreading combinations between them and the army, after expressing great displeasure, dissolved parliament, though urged against this by Fleetwood and others. He continued to exert the same vigour in foreign affairs, but he derived little satisfaction from his successes abroad, being kept in perpetual inquietude at home, particularly from the dread of assassination. The publication of a pamphlet, by Colonel Titus, who had formerly been attached to his cause, entitled

"Killing, no murder," produced such an effect on him, that he never smiled after perusing it. All composure of mind now forsook him, and he found that the grandeur and power, which he had so much coveted, was become an overwhelming load. Every action betrayed the terrors which haunted him; a strong guard constantly attended him; he wore armour under his clothes, and always carried weapons; he never returned from any place by the way he went, nor let it be known what apartment he intended to sleep in. To encrease his distress, he had no consolation in his own family. The violent republican principles of his eldest daughter, made her regard with indignation even her father possessed of supreme power; the others favoured the royal cause, and Mrs Claypole, his favourite daughter, upbraided him on her death-bed with his usurpation. The anxiety and horror of his mind soon affected his health: he was seized with a slow fever, and tertian ague, and died, September 3d, 1658, a day he had always considered most fortunate for him. Cromwell was in the 59th year of his age, and must be acknowledged to have been an extraordinary character. What could be more wonderful than for a private man to attempt and execute the subversion of a long-established monarchy;—to subdue his enemies by arms,—his friends by artifice;—to assemble and dissolve parliaments at his pleasure;—to reduce, by means of a mutinous army, a warlike and powerful nation to subjection, and yet to maintain authority over that army;—to procure for himself the offer of a throne;—to retain the exercise of sovereign power;—and to be feared and courted by foreign princes;—and all this to be accomplished without possessing those dazzling qualities which sometimes raise men to high dignity.

54. Richard, the eldest son of the Protector, was proclaimed as his successor, and received from all parts of the kingdom congratulatory addresses, and the usual compliments from foreign ministers. He was of a gentle and humane disposition, irresolute, and void of ambition;

and, finding that a strong party was raised against him the Republican officers, he resigned his office, April 25, 1659, and lived in retirement to an advanced age. The officers, being now possessed of supreme authority, agreed to recall the Long, or *Rump* parliament, as it was called, which had been expelled by Cromwell. This excited general indignation, and brought about a reconciliation between the Royalists and Presbyterians, both parties ardently desiring the dissolution of that tyranny, both civil and military, which threatened to prove oppressive and ruinous to the nation. Great exertions were made in the Royal cause, but every attempt was for a time baffled, and, when the condition of Charles seemed more hopeless, the prudence and loyalty of General Monk were preparing the way for his peaceful restoration to the throne of his ancestors.

55. Without discovering his intentions, he marched into England with an army not exceeding 6000 men; crossed the Tweed at Coldstream, January, 1660, and advanced to St Alban's, from which he sent a messenger desiring parliament to remove the troops which were in the vicinity of London. With this they found it necessary to comply; and Monk with his army took up his quarters in Westminster. On being introduced to parliament, February 6th, and receiving the thanks of the house for his services, he replied, that he had only done his duty, and that more important services must now be rendered to the nation; that, on his progress to England he had observed the earnest desire of all ranks to be, the dissolution of the present, and the summoning of a free parliament. He urged on them the necessity of this measure, and entered into a union with the citizens of London to support every enterprise for the welfare and settlement of the Commonwealth; which was understood to imply, though he still avoided alluding to, the restoration of the king. The greatest joy was manifested throughout the city, at the prospect of deliverance from factious tyrants; and the surviving members, who had

excluded by Colonel Pride in 1548, having been
ed, they gave encreased power to the general, fixed
essment for the support of the navy and army, and
liately dissolved themselves, March 16th, issuing
for the assembling of a new parliament. The elec-
were every where in favour of the king's party ; and
continued to use every endeavour to secure the re-
ishment of monarchy ; but still without discovering,
t by his actions, his attachment to the king's inter-

Sir John Granville, who was sent to him on a
ission from the king, was desired to assure Charles
services, and to exhort him to leave Spain, where
was apprehensive he might be detained as a pledge
e recovery of Dunkirk and Jamaica. Charles at-
l to the advice, and escaped to Breda. The new
nent met, April 25th, 1660 ; but for some days no
entured to speak of the king. On the 1st of May,
eneral, having assured himself of their inclinations,
d Annesley, president of the council, to inform
that Sir John Granville was now at the door, with
r from the king to the Commons. He was called
h the loudest acclamations : the letter and declara-
ffering a general amnesty, liberty of conscience, and
rrence with parliament, was read with satisfaction,
dered to be published ; and, without a moment's de-
: a dissenting vote, a committee was appointed to
e an answer. The peers hastened to take their share
: settlement of the nation, and the king was pro-
d with great solemnity, May 8th. A present of
00 was voted to him, £10,000 to the duke of York,
) to the duke of Gloucester ; and a committee of
and commons were sent to invite Charles to take
sion of the throne.

CHARLES II.

[1685.

Landed at Dover 27th May, and was received by
, whom he cordially embraced. No subject had
done more for his king and country. In a few
s, by his prudent and disinterested conduct, he

had restored his king to a throne, and three kingdoms to peace. Charles was thirty years of age when he returned to England; and never prince obtained the crown in more favourable circumstances, or enjoyed more the affectionate attachment of his subjects, which his appearance and engaging manners were well calculated to encrease. He showed no disposition to resent injuries, and his earnestness to have the act of indemnity passed gave great satisfaction. The violence of party-spirit quickly disappeared, and the names of Cavalier and Roundhead were no longer heard. Only ten of those more immediately concerned in the late king's death suffered: of the others, some left the country, and the rest were reprieved. The rejoicings of the court were interrupted by the death of the duke of Gloucester, September 13th, of small-pox, in the twentieth year of his age. He possessed the most estimable qualities, and the king was deeply affected by his death. The princess of Orange, who had come to England at the Restoration, died soon after. The Queen-mother paid a visit to the king, to obtain his consent to the marriage of the princess Henrietta to the duke of Orleans, brother of Louis XIV.

57. After a recess of two months, parliament met, and proceeded to the settlement of the king's revenue; and as there was great unanimity, business was soon despatched, and the king, in a most gracious speech, dissolved them. Charles created Monk duke of Albemarle, and ever treated him with the highest distinction. His first choice of ministers was very favourable to the nation; Clarendon was made chancellor, Ormond steward of the household, Southampton high-treasurer, and Sir Edward Nicholas secretary of state. These men were united in friendship, and supported one another in promoting the public interest. The chancellor, aware of the danger to be apprehended from the mutinous spirit so long prevalent in the army, hastened to disband them. Only a few guards and garrisons were retained, and about 1000 horse

and 4000 foot; and this was the first regular standing-army under the monarchy. The fortifications of those towns which, during the civil wars, had made resistance to the king were demolished. The royal authority being fully established in Scotland, the English troops quartered there were disbanded, and the forts erected by Cromwell to keep the country in subjection were rased.

58. Prelacy had been restored in England, and the ejected clergy recovered their livings; but none averse to that mode of worship were as yet obliged to adopt it. Charles, though not warmly attached to prelacy, had an aversion to the Scottish Presbyterians, from whom he had formerly suffered great indignities, and he resolved to establish prelacy in that kingdom also. The first steps to attain this object were stained with the blood of two eminent supporters of presbyterianism: these were the marquis of Argyle and the reverend James Guthrie, minister of Stirling. The Covenant was declared unlawful, and monarchy and episcopacy were now as much exalted as they had been lately depressed. A new parliament met, May 8th, 1661; an act was passed for the security of the king's person and government, and it was declared high treason, to levy war against, or to imprison the king. The bishops were restored to their seats in parliament. In 1662, the act of uniformity was passed, which required that every clergyman who had not received episcopal ordination, should be re-ordained; that he should give assent to all contained in the book of Common-prayer, abjure the Covenant, and renounce the principle of taking arms against the king. The promises of toleration were thus broken; but it was allowed that Charles did not willingly concur in the measure.

59. Catherine of Portugal, to whom the king was betrothed, arrived at Portsmouth, May 19th, and the marriage took place on the 21st. Her portion was £500,000, and the fortresses of Tangiers in Africa, and of Bombay in the East Indies. Public attention was next engaged

by the trial of Lambert and Vane. Both were condemned, but Lambert, on showing submission, was reprieved and lived in Guernsey for thirty years. It was remarked that Vane's death, June 14th, closed the scene of blood which he had opened, by being the chief instrument of Strafford's death.

60. St Bartholomew's day, August 24th, was the time appointed for the clergy either to conform to the law, or relinquish their livings; and on that day about 200 sacrificed their worldly interest to religious principle. Bishopricks were offered to Calamy, Baxter, and Reynold, leaders of the Presbyterians; the latter only could be induced to accept: the two former had been appointed chaplains to the king, on his restoration. The king issued, December 26th, a Declaration of Indulgence, and expressed his desire to adhere to his promises of liberty of conscience. Against this Declaration parliament remonstrated, as the purpose of it was supposed to be to favor the Catholics, and the king saw fit to insist no farther. A proclamation was soon after issued against Jesuits and Romish priests; but those belonging to the two queens were excepted, and they could thus give countenance to as many as they pleased. Notwithstanding the sale of Dunkirk to the French for £400,000, (an action condemned by all parties,) the king's debts now amounted to a large sum. Four subsidies were voted him, at this was the last time taxes were levied in this manner.

61. War was declared against Holland in 1664, on pretence that English commerce was obstructed by the Dutch. The duke of York had the command of the English fleet, and gained a victory, June 3d, 1664. This success produced a rupture with France and Denmark, both of which determined to support the Dutch against the encreasing power of England. The English council were still desirous to continue the war, though visited this year with the calamity of the plague, which raged with such violence in London, as to cut off near 100,000 of the inhabitants. The streets were then a

narrow, and the upper floors of the houses projected so much, as to exclude the fresh air, and thus encreased the pestilence. The city was almost deserted, and the solemn silence which prevailed was only interrupted by melancholy cries for help, and the call of "Bring out your dead!" Many of the merchants retired to their vessels for safety, and some, as the pestilence encreased, put out to sea.

62. A good understanding still subsisted between the king and parliament: they granted him the supply demanded for the war, and he, to gratify them, passed the five-mile act, which gave occasion for just complaint. The non-conforming clergy had been ejected from their livings, and prohibited, by severe fines or imprisonment, from assembling for religious worship in private houses, if attended by five persons besides the household. They were now restricted from coming within five miles of any corporation, or any place where they had preached, and thus deprived of their influence, and of all means of support.

63. In June, 1666, an engagement took place between the English and Dutch fleets, which, though undecisive, was memorable from the length of its duration, (four days) and the great courage displayed. The English were victorious, under Albemarle and prince Rupert, in a fiercely-contested battle at the mouth of the Thames, July 25th. London had scarcely recovered from the desolation of the plague, when it was almost laid in ashes by a dreadful fire, which broke out in a baker's shop, September 2d, 1666, and continued to rage with violence for three days and nights; and it could only be extinguished by the blowing up of several houses. The king and duke exerted themselves to the utmost to check its progress; but 400 streets, and about 13,000 houses were destroyed. To such a height did the flames ascend, that they were said to have been visible from Scotland. This fire, though at the time calamitous, by reducing thousands to beggary, proved eventually beneficial to the city and kingdom. The city was soon rebuilt, and care taken to have

the streets wider, and more regular than before. London became more healthy, and the plague, which for centuries had almost always lurked in some quarter, has scarcely since appeared. Rumour, though without the slightest foundation, ascribed the fire to the Catholics, and it was the popular prejudice, that an inscription to that effect was engraved on the monument which was erected near the spot where the fire broke out. This was erased on king James' coming to the throne, was replaced by the Revolution; and was lately again erased.

64. Charles was now desirous of terminating a war which had hitherto been so fruitless; the Dutch were not less anxious to obtain peace, but the negotiations were protracted by De Wit, the Dutch minister, while the English, trusting to a speedy end of the war, became remiss in preparations for defence, they were thrown into the utmost consternation by the appearance of the Dutch fleet in the Thames. They sailed up the Medway, June 10th, 1667, took Sheerness, and burnt three men-of-war. Having made a fruitless attempt on Portsmouth and Plymouth, they again sailed up the Thames as far as Tilbury, where they were repulsed. Peace was restored by the signing of the treaty at Breda, July 10th, and the acquisition of New York was the only advantage derived by a war, the concluding transaction of which, owing to the parsimony of government, excited the violent indignation of the people. The Chancellor, Lord Clarendon, was at this time exposed to the hatred of all parties. Whatever difficulties arose in the war, blame was thrown on his measures, though he had proved himself friendly to the liberties of his country as well as to his king. The duke of York, who had married Clarendon's daughter, vainly exerted himself in his behalf, and he retired to France, where he employed his leisure in preparing a history of the civil wars.

65. The affairs of Scotland, being, from the king's aversion to business, entrusted entirely to his ministers, *the greatest tyranny* was exercised in the execution

the law for the establishment of episcopacy, to which the greater part of the nation had an insurmountable aversion. All incumbents, who had been elected by the kirk-session and lay-elders, were required to receive a presentation from the patron, and be inducted anew by the bishop. To this many, chiefly in the western counties, refused obedience, and 350, above a third of the parishes in the kingdom, were declared vacant. New ministers, many of them ignorant, and even vicious, were appointed, and the people, who had loved and revered their former instructors, regarded these intruders with prejudices which their conduct in no wise tended to soften. The people, though discontented, gave no symptom of mutiny; but their submission procured an encrease, instead of a diminution, of the rigours of the council. Military force was employed to execute the law against conventicles. Sir James Turner, their commander, received from the clergy lists of those who were supposed to frequent these meetings, or who absented themselves from church; and, without farther proof, fines were demanded, and the soldiers quartered on them till payment was made. Additional forces, under the command of Dalziel and Drummond, received full license to exercise their tyranny, till representations of the enormities practised being made to Charles, he gave orders to stop their proceedings.

66. The king's lenity came too late to prevent the evil. The people, irritated by ill treatment, and inflamed with zeal, rose in arms. At Lanark, they renewed the Covenant, professed submission to the king, desiring only the re-establishment of Presbytery, and of their former ministers. Their force never exceeded 2000, and ere they had advanced near Edinburgh, it had diminished to 800. Dalziel opposed their progress, and attacked them, 28th November, 1666, as they attempted to retire west by the Pentland hills. They resolutely received the first charge, but immediately after fell into disorder, and fled. About forty were killed, 130 were taken prisoners, and the rest, favoured by the night, made their

escape. The oppressions they had suffered, and inoffensive behaviour, made them objects of compassion; yet the king's ministers determined to take vengeance on them. Ten suffered on one gibbet in Edinburgh thirty-five before their own doors, who might all have saved their lives by renouncing the Covenant. They put a stop to the executions, and, in a letter to the council, he ordered the prisoners to be liberated, on promise of future obedience to the laws. The delivery of the letter was delayed by Sharpe; and Mackail, in the interval, expired under the torture.

67. The settlement of Ireland, after the Restoration, was a work of great difficulty. An insurrection was projected, but was defeated by the vigilance of Ormonde, whose authority and equity greatly promoted the cure of jarring interests. An act, prohibiting the exportation of cattle into England, on which they depended, brought great distress on the Irish. They opposed the bill, but the Commons were resolute in their purpose, and he was obliged to assent. In 1670 a new ministry was appointed, and their pernicious counsels involved Charles in difficulties during the remainder of his reign, by exciting the jealousy and discontent of the nation. He was persuaded by them, to enter into an alliance with France, and again to provoke war with Holland. In defiance of the Triple League he had so lately made, the great satisfaction of the nation; while the fears and displeasure of the people were increased, by the declaration of York's declared attachment to Popery. The king acted as if already an absolute monarch: he offered the treasurer's staff to any one who could find an expedient to supply his want of money. Clifford proposed shutting up the Exchequer, and retaining the payments made into it, which was done, January 2d, 1672, without any warning being given. General confusion and distrust prevailed on this breach of public faith, which was followed by stagnation of commerce, and occasioned the ruin of many individuals.

68. Holland had now to contend with the united forces of England and France, the one attacking them by land, the other by sea. Louis, with a large army, approached the Dutch frontiers; where the troops, scattered over so many towns, made a feeble resistance. All places surrendered, and Louis owed his success more to the weakness of his enemies, than to his own valour. The Dutch, in consternation at these losses, vented their rage on the celebrated De Wit, whose prudence and integrity had so long merited their highest applause; and he, with his brother, who had bravely served his country in war, fell a sacrifice to the fury of the populace. The republic now united under the young prince of Orange, who roused them to defend their remaining provinces; and Louis, finding no farther success likely to be obtained, retired to Versailles.

69. Parliament met, in February, 1673, after a prorogation of two years; and, though unwilling to come to a breach with the king, they expressed disapprobation of the war, and required the Declaration of Indulgence to be recalled. A law was also passed for imposing a test on all who enjoyed any public office. Besides the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and receiving the sacrament in the established church, they were obliged to abjure the doctrine of transubstantiation. The war with Holland was continued, and various sea-fights took place without victory being gained by either party. Charles saw that he could obtain no supply for prolonging what was so odious to the nation, and concluded a peace, which was proclaimed in London with great rejoicing.

70. The conduct of Charles had now inspired general mistrust and jealousy of his intentions: this he saw with regret, and sought expedients to appease their murmurs. He proposed the marriage of the prince of Orange, (who was much respected throughout Europe) with lady Mary, eldest daughter of the duke of York, and no measure could have given more general satisfaction. The prince came to England, and the marriage took place, October

22d, 1677. It was now expected that England would unite with the allies against France ; but Charles was unwilling to break with Louis, and the former jealousies against him were revived.

71. In Scotland, Lauderdale had become prime minister, and had found parliament ready to comply with his desire of enacting more severe laws against conventicles. Ruinous fines were imposed both on preacher and hearers, when the meetings were in houses ; but if in the fields, the penalty was death and confiscation of goods ; and, as it was often difficult to get evidence, all who refused to give information on oath, were fined, imprisoned, or banished. The case of Mitchell showed the treachery as well as tyranny of Lauderdale's administration. In 1668, he had attempted the assassination of archbishop Sharpe, whose apostasy and subsequent rigour had rendered him odious to the Covenanters. He escaped at the time ; but some years after was recognised by Sharpe, and apprehended. On solemn promise of pardon, he confessed, that he was the person who had made the attempt, on which, instead of being liberated, he was sent to the Bass, in the frith of Forth, where many ministers were then confined ; and after remaining there two years in irons, he was executed in Edinburgh. The number of conventicles increased in the West ; and, on pretence that these counties were in a state of rebellion, twelve noblemen and gentlemen were dispossessed of their houses, which were converted into garrisons, and an army of 10,000, of which 8000 were undisciplined Highlanders, were let loose to commit havoc and destruction in the most populous and industrious counties of Scotland. The voice of the nation was raised against this outrage ; and, after two months, the Highlanders returned to their homes, loaded with the spoils they had thus unjustly obtained.

72. The gentry and farmers were then required to sign a bond, that they would neither frequent, nor allow their tenants or families to attend conventicles. The king was opposed to these violent proceedings ; and, that com-

plaints might not reach the throne, noblemen and gentlemen of property were prohibited from leaving the kingdom. Persecution animated the zeal of the Covenanters; they persisted in holding meetings; and as they were exposed to be attacked by the military, they, on these occasions, appeared in arms. The murder of Archbishop Sharpe, though perpetrated by a few individuals without premeditation, and without the concurrence or approbation of their party, was made a pretext for increased severity against them, and this provoked more determined opposition. On the 29th May, the anniversary of the Restoration, they burned, at the market-place of Rutherglen, several acts of parliament and council which established prelacy and prohibited conventicles, having previously extinguished the bonfires lighted on the occasion. Claverhouse, three days after this, attacked a conventicle on Loudon hill, and was repulsed with the loss of thirty men. Having thus involved themselves, they determined to persevere, and seek, by their valour, that redress they could not otherwise obtain. They went to Glasgow, of which, though at first repulsed, they made themselves masters; dispossessed the established clergy, declaring that they fought against the king's supremacy, against popery, prelacy, and a popish successor. Monmouth was sent with a small body of English troops, to join the Scottish guards, in pursuit of the rebels, who did not exceed 8000 men, and had posted themselves advantageously, June 22d, near Bothwell, where there was no access to them but over the bridge, which was easily defended by a small number. When their ammunition failed, they were ordered to retire, which occasioned their immediate defeat; 700 were killed in the pursuit, 1200 were taken prisoners, and treated by Monmouth with great humanity. He procured an act of indemnity; but Lauderdale's power still prevailed against the Covenanters.

73. In 1678, information of a pretended plot to establish popery, was given by Oates, a man of infamous

character; and, though the imposture was glaring and absurd, it was readily received by parliament. The applause and reward given to Oates, induced Bedloe, a man known as an impostor, to come before council with information still more extraordinary and inconsistent; but such was the delusion and prejudice of the people that even this evidence was not rejected. A bill was introduced for a new test, in which popery was called idolatry, and all who refused to take the test were excluded from both houses. The duke of York entreated an exception in his favour, protesting that his religion should be between God and his own soul, and should never appear in his public conduct. He prevailed by two votes, and parliament, which had sat for the long period of seventeen years, was dissolved, December, 1678. Coleman, the duke's secretary, and several Jesuits were executed, all protesting their innocence concerning these plots. Charles, finding that the new parliament might be expected to be even more refractory than the old, became alarmed; and, to conciliate them, desired the duke of York to leave the country; with which he complied, and retired to Brussels. When parliament met, a bill was brought in excluding the duke from succession, and prohibiting his return to the kingdom. To this parliament the country is indebted for security from arbitrary imprisonment, which prevails in some degree in almost every other government. They passed the *Habeas Corpus* act, which provided what was wanting in the *Great Charter*, and *Bill of Rights*, to secure this valuable part of liberty. The cry against popery continued; the blood which had been shed on account of the plot had not sufficed, and several more were sacrificed, to which the king was obliged to yield; but hearing that the Commons were preparing a remonstrance to inflame the minds of the people still farther, he dissolved them, July 10th, without consulting his Council.

74. The credulity of the nation again appeared in the credit given to an outlawed felon named Dangerfield,

who became the author of a new plot, called from the place where the papers were said to be discovered, *The Meal-tub plot*. Great clamour was raised; and it was at this time that the well known epithets of *Whig* and *Tory* came into use, as party names. Charles used every means to gain popularity; and, in his speech at the opening of a new parliament, he recommended peace and union among themselves, as requisite for the safety of both king and kingdom. Their proceedings were very violent, particularly in the debates on the Exclusion bill: and in shedding, after an interval of two years, the blood of the aged Stafford, on account of the popish plot. Charles dissolved it, and called another at Oxford. He complained of the proceedings of the former parliament, and said he gave them yet another opportunity to provide for the public safety. This produced no effect. Civil war seemed likely to be resumed, and the king again dissolved them, with the intention of not calling another.

75. The duke of York was now permitted to return, and was sent to Scotland, where his courteous demeanour gained the affection of the nobility and gentry; but his treatment of the Covenanters showed him to be of an unrelenting temper. Above 2000 were outlawed for conversing, or holding intercourse with rebels, and pursued in their retreats by spies and informers: ensnaring questions were put, and, on refusing to answer, capital punishments were inflicted; women were brought to the gibbet, and some of the fugitives, frantic with oppression, having published a declaration renouncing allegiance to Charles Stuart, whom they called a tyrant, soldiers were dispersed over the country, and the lowest officers had power to oblige every one they met to abjure this declaration; and, on refusal, to shoot them instantly; which was done in several cases.

76. In 1683, several eminent persons, with different objects in view, combined to raise an insurrection: some desired a commonwealth, others, the exclusion of the duke, and redress of grievances; while Monmouth, the

king's natural son, aspired to the crown. Argyle and the Scottish malcontents entered into an agreement with them, to bring the Covenanters into the field, on receiving £10,000 to purchase arms in Holland. In addition to this, some persons of inferior rank plotted the assassination of the king on his return from Newmarket races : the house in which the king was took fire, which occasioned his return a week sooner than was expected ; but the plot, called from the place where it was concerted, the Rye-houseplot, was discovered, and several of those engaged in it were executed, and acknowledged the justice of their sentence. Lord Russell was next brought to trial, as one of the conspirators, and condemned, though there was no legal proof against him. £100,000 was offered by his father, the duke of Bedford, to the duchess of Portsmouth, to procure a pardon. Lady Russell threw herself at the king's feet, and pleaded with tears the loyalty of her father, the good earl of Southampton ; but the king was inexorable, and he was executed, July 21st, 1683. Algernon Sidney suffered in the same cause, December 17th. These severities, so opposite to the king's disposition, were ascribed to the influence of the duke. The popularity of Charles returned with his increase of power, and his situation seemed now more eligible than it had ever been since the Restoration. He married his niece, the lady Anne in 1684, to prince George, brother to the king of Denmark, which was very satisfactory to the nation.

77. Soon after this Charles was seized with apoplexy, and died, February 6th, 1685, in the 55th year of his age, and 25th of his reign. The amiable and affable deportment of Charles gained the affection of all who approached him. He has been accused of ingratitude towards those who had lost their all in the service of his family ; but it must be remembered, that the number of those greatly exceeded his means of rewarding them. His indolence rendered his government dangerous to his *people*, and dishonourable to himself ; by making him

regardless of the interests and glory of the nation, and indifferent to its religion ; and leading him to expose it to the danger and ignominy of foreign conquest. His death was regretted, as well from affection to his person, as from aversion to his successor.

1685.]

JAMES II.,

[1688.

78. Immediately on his accession, called the privy council, and professed his resolution to maintain the laws and religion then established. This declaration was received with great applause, as he had hitherto been noted for sincerity : dutiful addresses came from all quarters ; and, notwithstanding the violent efforts so lately made for his exclusion, he seemed now to be firmly established on the throne. His first actions, however, showed how little dependence was to be placed on his professions. He ordered the revenue granted to the late king during life, to be levied, as formerly, without deigning to make any application to parliament ; he went to mass, (at that time illegal) openly, and in state ; and even sent an agent to Rome with submissions to the Pope, to procure the re-admission of England into the bosom of the Catholic church. Thus early did he display that bigotry and arbitrary disposition which proved fatal to his authority. The Pope, Innocent XI., dissuaded James from his rash proposal, as what experience had shown to be impracticable. A new parliament met, May 11th, and unanimously voted an annual revenue of £600,000 during the king's life ; and, on the news of Monmouth's invasion, they voted £400,000 to suppress the rebellion.

79. Monmouth, urged on in his imprudent enterprise by the impatience of Argyle, (who had gone to Scotland to attempt an insurrection in his favour there) landed at Lyme, in Dorsetshire, June 11th, with scarcely a hundred followers ; but such was his popularity, that the number, in a few days, exceeded 2000. As he advanced to Axminster and Taunton, it encreased to 6000 ; and many were dismissed for want of arms. He entered Bridge-

water, Wells, and Frome; in all which places he was proclaimed; but hearing of the defeat and execution of Argyle, he sunk into despondency, and resolved to withdraw himself, but, as his followers expressed their determination to adhere to him, he attacked the king's army, July 5th, at Sedgemoor, near Bridgewater. The rebels at first displayed great courage; but, after a combat of three hours, they gave way, and were pursued with great slaughter: 1500 fell; Monmouth fled for twenty miles, till his horse sunk under him: he then changed clothes with a peasant, but was discovered lying in a ditch, and covered with fern. He wrote the most submissive letters to the king, begging that his life might be spared, but would not purchase it by discovering his associates; and he was followed to the scaffold by the regrets of the people, whose favourite he had always been.

80. His followers experienced the utmost severity from the savage barbarity of the king's officers, and the inhuman Jefferies, who was sent to try the rebels: he overawed the juries by his menaces; and the innocent were often involved with the guilty. Besides the numbers butchered by military tyranny, upwards of 250 of those brought to trial were executed. Among the many victims were Lady Lisle, and Mrs Gaunt, accused of harbouring rebels. Lady Lisle, though the widow of one of the regicides, was well known to be herself loyal, and had sent her son to fight against the rebels; but the jury were constrained to condemn her, and the king refused all solicitations for her pardon. Mrs Gaunt was a lady noted for benevolence, and was betrayed by the rebel who had sought her protection. Jefferies was not less rapacious than cruel: a gentleman of Devonshire was imprisoned, and, though he could not learn of what crime he was accused, was obliged to purchase his liberty by paying Jefferies £15,000. The king shared the obloquy of these proceedings, by advancing him to the dignity of Chancellor.

81. James now openly endeavoured to establish popery; and, that he might employ Catholic officers, he dispensed

with the test. This excited alarm throughout the nation, and the former horror against popery was revived by an incident which then occurred in France. The edict of Nantz, which had been enacted by Henry IV., and declared irrevocable, to secure for the Protestants the free exercise of their religion, was at this time revoked by Louis XIV.: to escape the persecution which ensued, above half a million left the kingdom. Of these, about 50,000 took refuge in England, and their representations encreased the terror felt at the king's evident intention to abolish the Protestant religion. Even the protection he gave to these distressed Hugonots was regarded as insidious, being opposed to his avowed principles and administration. On parliament expressing some dissatisfaction at his measures, he dissolved them. Four Catholic lords were brought into the privy council, and several Protestants, who held high offices, were dismissed. The Jesuits were permitted to erect colleges in different parts of the kingdom, and four Catholic bishops were publicly consecrated, and sent to exercise their functions as vicars apostolical. The Catholics were invested with the whole authority in Scotland and Ireland, and multitudes of Protestants left the latter country in dread of a renewal of massacres.

82. James next attempted to intrude Catholics into the universities. He recommended Father Francis, a Benedictine monk, to the university of Cambridge, for the degree of Master of Arts; and, on their refusal, they were cited to appear before the court of Ecclesiastical Commission, instituted by James, and the vice-chancellor was suspended. The presidency of Magdalen college, Oxford, becoming vacant, a mandate was sent in favour of Farmer, who, besides being a Catholic, was a man of infamous character. The college respectfully applied to the king to recall his mandate, and proceeded to elect Dr Hough, a man of integrity and learning. A new mandate was issued by the king in favour of Parker, also of bad character; and on the college still objecting,

James was so irritated, that he expelled the president and all the fellows except two, who complied, and put Parker in possession of the office. In 1687, the king gave orders that his Declaration of Indulgence should be read by the clergy after service, in all the churches. Against this, six of the bishops, and the primate, petitioned the king; but, instead of yielding to their solicitation, he committed them to the Tower, and gave orders to the crown lawyers to prosecute them for a seditious libel, as their respectful petition was called. This extraordinary trial excited the deepest interest and anxiety; and, on the acquittal of the bishops, expressions of joy resounded throughout the city. James, enraged at the issue of the trial, dismissed two of the judges, known to be favourable to the bishops, and ordered all clergymen who had not read the Declaration, which included all them, with the exception of two hundred, to be prosecuted.

83. The birth of a prince, June 10th, so ardently desired by the king, and so agreeable to the Catholics, proved the immediate cause of his downfall, as it increased the discontent and apprehensions of the people, by depriving them of the prospect of a protestant successor. Seeing no other means of redress, pressing invitations were sent to the Prince of Orange, to come over and assist in the recovery of their laws and liberties. Even rival parties laid aside their animosities, and, regarding the prince as their protector, concurred in resisting their infatuated sovereign. He was not averse to accede to their wishes, and preparations were secretly made for the enterprise. His intentions, however, could not be concealed from the French court; and Louis not only informed James of his danger, but offered assistance in various ways, which was rejected. Mass having been celebrated in the admiral's ship, and the protestant chaplain dismissed, the fleet began to mutiny, and were with difficulty appeased. Discontent also appeared in the army; and, to make a trial of their dispositions, a battalion was

drawn out before the king, when all who disapproved of the repeal of the test and penal statutes, were desired to lay down their arms. To the surprise and dismay of James, this was done by all, except two captains and a few popish soldiers.

84. On the 23d September, James received certain information of the intended invasion from Holland; and he suddenly found himself on the brink of a precipice, which his delusion had hitherto concealed from him. He now retracted those measures which had created him so many enemies; but his concessions came too late to serve his cause, forced from him as they evidently were by fear. So great was his infatuation, that even the dangers which threatened him, did not deter him from naming the Pope, at the baptism of the young prince, as one of the godfathers. The prince's declaration, enumerating all the grievances of the nation, and professing the sole design of the invasion to be to procure the settlement of religion, liberty, and property, was dispersed over the kingdom, and universally approved. Having thus concerted his measures, he set sail from Helvoetsluys, with a fleet of 500 vessels, and on the 5th November, landed an army of 14,000 in Torbay. They marched first to Exeter; but, for some days, no one joined them, so great was the terror which prevailed on account of the executions which followed Monmouth's rebellion. None however thought of opposing the invader; and the effect of the general detestation of the king's measures soon appeared. Several officers of distinction deserted to the prince, and others declared they could not in conscience fight against him. Lord Churchill, in whom the king reposed entire confidence, and who had been advanced by him to his present rank from being a page, used his influence in inducing others to join him in abandoning his unhappy master. James, who was steady and sincere in his friendships, was much shocked at this and other instances of ingratitude he was exposed to; but the most overwhelming blow was the conduct of the princess Anne, who was influenced by Lady

Churchhill to forsake her father in his extremity. When informed of it, he burst into tears, and exclaimed in anguish, "God help me; my own children have forsaken me."

85. The intelligence from all quarters encreased the king's alarm; and, having none to confide in but those exposed to as great danger as himself, he resolved to leave England. He sent the queen and infant prince to Calais, under the care of Count Lauzun, and on the 12th December, he left London in disguise, intending to sail for France. When his flight was discovered, the populace rose in a tumult, and destroyed all the mass-houses. Jefferies, the chancellor, was so ill treated by them, that he died soon after; and, to encrease the disorder, the troops in the neighbourhood were disbanded, and let loose upon the country. In this exigency, the Prince of Orange was applied to, and a rumour which was circulated, that a massacre of the Protestants had commenced, made his approach to London be the more welcomed. The news that the king had been seized at Feversham, threw all again into confusion. The prince sent orders that he should not approach nearer than Rochester; but he had already arrived in London, and compassion for his situation seemed to have revived the loyalty of the people, who received him with acclamations.

86. James might again have resumed the reins of government, had he followed the counsels of his friends; but, deserted by the nobility, and terrified by the menaces of the prince, whose object was to induce him to leave the kingdom, he relinquished his authority in despair. The Dutch guards were ordered to displace the English, and to take possession of Whitehall, where James then resided. A message was sent by the prince after midnight, desiring him to leave the palace next morning; and, alarmed at this harsh treatment, he desired permission to retire to Rochester. Here he waited some days, in expectation of being invited to keep possession of the throne; but, finding that all concurred in neglecting him, *he embarked privately, December 23d, and arrived safely*

at Ambleteuse, from which he went to St Germain, where Louis received him with the greatest kindness and sympathy.

87. James mounted the throne with the character of being steady, diligent, brave, and honourable in all his enterprises and dealings; and in that high station, his frugality of the public money, and his assiduous attention to public affairs, were exemplary; while his judicious encouragement of trade, and jealousy of national honour, were laudable: yet all those excellencies became pernicious, and even dangerous to his kingdom, for want of a proper regard to the religion and constitution of his country.

88. In this manner did the prince effect the deliverance of the kingdom with little effusion of blood, only one officer and a few privates of the Dutch army having fallen in a skirmish. It now remained to get possession of the crown, which some lawyers advised him to claim by right of conquest; but this advice he rejected. The peers and bishops then requested him to summon a convention, by circular letters, and in the mean time to assume the government of the nation. He still objected to act on what might be deemed imperfect authority: on which the members of any parliament which had sat during the reign of Charles II. were invited to meet, and to these were added the mayor, aldermen, and common council. They unanimously concurred in the request of the nobility; and the prince, thus supported by all the legal authority that could be obtained, wrote circular letters to the counties and corporations of England; his orders were every where complied with, and profound tranquillity prevailed. The fleet and army received his commands, and he received a loan of £200,000 from the city. The Scottish nobility then in London were assembled, and offered to the prince the administration of that kingdom, which he readily accepted.

89. The new Convention met, January 22d, 1689, and both houses gave thanks to the prince for his interference. In a few days, a majority of the Commons voted that

James II. having endeavoured to subvert the constitution of the kingdom, by breaking the original contract between king and people, and having, by the advice of Jesuits and other wicked persons, violated the fundamental laws, and withdrawn himself from the kingdom, has abdicated the government, and the throne is thereby vacant. This vote met with great opposition in the Upper House: an amendment was proposed; but the Commons persevered, and it was passed by a majority of fifteen, without any alteration. During these transactions the prince entered into no intrigues, and acted as if in nowise concerned. At length he deigned to express his sentiments, and told them, that he had been invited over to restore their liberty, which had been happily accomplished; that it was now their duty to concert measures for the settlement of the crown and kingdom; that having heard of various schemes, some proposing a regent, others to bestow the crown on the princess, he therefore thought it incumbent on him to inform them, that he could give no assistance, if either of these plans were adopted; his affairs abroad being of too much importance to be abandoned for a precarious dignity. The princess seconded these views; princess Anne also concurred, and the convention proceeded to pass a bill, settling the crown on the Prince and Princess of Orange, the princess Anne to succeed after their death, and her posterity after those of her sister. To this settlement was annexed a Declaration of Rights, where all points of late years disputed between king and people, were finally determined, and the royal prerogative more circumscribed, and more exactly defined, than at any former period of the English government. An offer of the crown was accordingly made in the name of the Lords and Commons of England, which the prince accepted, and the same day, February 13th, 1689, William and Mary were proclaimed king and queen of England.

[1689.]

WILLIAM III.

[1702.]

90. Began his reign by issuing a proclamation, confirming all Protestants in the offices they held on the 1st

December preceding. He chose his council from those who had been most active in promoting his interest, and their first resolution was to strengthen the new settlement, by changing the Convention into a parliament, which was done by William going, in the usual state, and addressing both houses from the throne. Debates arose as to the legality of this expedient, and also about the revenue of the crown. While deliberating on these matters, a message was sent by the king, that James had sailed from Brest, with an armament to invade Ireland, and a temporary supply of £420,000 was voted, but not till those of the bishops and noblemen who objected to take the oaths, had absented themselves. From this time, the party averse to William's government were called *Nonjurors*, or *Jacobites*. Being informed of the hostile designs of some of these, by means of intercepted letters, William had them apprehended and sent prisoners to the Tower. For this trespass on the law (which was called taking care of their liberties) he received the thanks of the Lords, and the Commons empowered him to dispense with the Habeas Corpus act till the 17th of April following. Discontent appeared in the army; and William resolved to retain the Dutch troops in England, and to send to Holland, in their room, the most disaffected of the English. The coronation was performed by the bishop of London, April 11th, the oath having been altered and explained.

91. William, naturally averse to persecution, and alienated from the church of England by the opposition he had met with from its members, was extremely anxious to procure a toleration for dissenters; and a bill for this purpose was, after some debate, passed into a law. Even Catholics, though not comprehended in the act, enjoyed, in a great degree, the benefit of the toleration. Hitherto there had been no distinction between that part of the revenue allotted for the king's use, and that employed in the public service, the sovereign having the disposal of the whole. It was now resolved to set apart a certain sum for the maintenance of the king's household, and the

support of his dignity, and that the rest should be under the inspection of government. This salutary arrangement, though highly displeasing to the king, was agreed to, and ever since the yearly supplies have been appropriated to specified purposes, and an account of the application submitted to both houses.

92. The Scottish Convention met at Edinburgh, on March 14th. The duke of Hamilton and the Presbyterians declared for William; the duke of Gordon, who maintained the castle for James, was required to surrender; and, on refusal, was proclaimed a traitor, and the castle was blockaded. On the 11th April, William and Mary were solemnly proclaimed in presence of a number of the nobility and gentry at the cross of Edinburgh, and having promised to concur in all just measures for the interest of the kingdom, the coronation-oath was tendered to their majesties by the earl of Argyle then in London. The fortifications of the castle having been destroyed, and several breaches made in the walls by the besiegers, the duke of Gordon was compelled to capitulate, and, on the 13th of June, surrendered. The hopes of James' adherents were now centred in Viscount Dundee, who, during this time, had been actively exerting himself in his master's cause. He had collected a body of Highlanders, and determined, though disappointed of the assistance he had been promised from Ireland, and distressed for want of provisions, to encounter General Mackay, who was advancing to oppose him. A furious engagement took place, July 17th, at the pass of Killycrankie, in which the Highlanders obtained a complete victory: 1200 of the king's troops fell, 500 were taken prisoners, and the rest fled with precipitation. The victory, however, was dearly purchased, and pursuit prevented by the death of their beloved leader; and the cause he had espoused with so much courage and fidelity, could no longer be maintained when deprived of his services. Most of the clans, disgusted with their new leader, laid down their arms, and submitted to William.

93. James' authority being still acknowledged in Ireland, by the Catholics, who greatly exceeded the Protestants in number; he determined to make another effort for the recovery of his dominions. Having received the assistance of Louis, he left France in the end of February, and landed at Kinsale, where he was joyfully welcomed. Tyrconnel, the lieutenant of the kingdom, and the army were devoted to his interest; and he made his public entry into Dublin amidst the acclamations of the people. The siege of Londonderry was memorable from the brave resistance made by the Protestants, (in which they were encouraged by the exhortations of the Rev. Mr Walker) though suffering the extremity of famine. Rosene, the French general, exasperated at the opposition, drove the Protestants, like cattle, for thirty miles round, to the number of 4000, under the walls of Londonderry, threatening to take vengeance on them. This barbarity made the besieged determine rather to perish than submit; and they erected a gibbet in sight of the enemy, on which they threatened to hang the prisoners taken during the siege, if the Protestants were not dismissed. After being detained there three days without food, they were allowed to depart; but some hundreds perished from fatigue or want, and those who were able to return home, found their dwellings plundered. When even the most loathsome food had failed, the garrison were relieved, by the safe arrival of two vessels laden with provisions, after having sustained the enemy's fire. This so dispirited the army of James, that they abandoned the siege, which had already cost them 9000 men.

94. James had been six months in Ireland before the assistance requested by the Protestants was sent over. At length an army of 10,000, under the command of the duke of Schomberg, landed near Carrickfergus, 13th August, and took possession of Belfast. They then besieged Carrickfergus, which capitulated, and the rest of the army having arrived, they marched through Lisburn and Hillsborough, and encamped near Newry, which was

abandoned by the enemy. The situation was damp and low, and a contagious distemper greatly diminished the troops. The enemy also suffered ; and James being surrounded with difficulties, both parties retired to winter quarters.

95. The popularity of William already declined : many were displeased with his measures, and still more with his reserved and haughty manner. The different factions strongly opposed each other ; both applied to the king, who found himself so perplexed between them, that he resolved to retire to Holland, and leave the government in the queen's hands. Some noblemen, whom he informed of his design, remonstrated against it ; and he complied with their request to abandon his resolution. The same jealousies and dissensions prevailed in the Scottish parliament, and William found great difficulty in pacifying the opposite parties. All laws in favour of episcopacy were repealed, and the ejected presbyterian ministers were declared the only orthodox part of the church. In 1690, a new parliament met, when the king informed them of his intention to go to Ireland, to finish the war. He desired them to settle the revenue, and prepare an act to confirm the authority of the queen in his absence.

96. On the 4th of June, he embarked for Ireland, and was received at Belfast by the duke of Schomberg and other officers. James, trusting to his being detained in England by the disputes in parliament, was not aware of his arrival till six days after ; when he immediately left Dublin, to join his forces, which he posted on the banks of the Boyne. William marched to the opposite bank ; and, while surveying the ground, had a narrow escape, from the discharge of a field-piece, which grazed his right shoulder, and killed a soldier and two horses at his side. Early next morning, July 1st, the battle commenced. William led on his troops, who were distinguished by having green twigs in their hats. James surveyed the action from the hill of Dunmore ; and seeing the battle *likely to be decided against him*, instead of endeavouring

o rally his troops, he returned to Dublin. Having assembled the magistrates and council, he complained of the cowardice of the Irish, but assured them that, though now obliged to yield to force, he would still attempt their deliverance. Next day, he set out for Waterford, from which he embarked for France. About fifteen hundred Irish fell in the battle of the Boyne: the Protestants lost five hundred, but the gallant duke of Schomberg was among the slain. Drogheda surrendered, without opposition, on the following day. The duke of Ormond was sent to take possession of Dublin; the king followed, and published a declaration of pardon to all who should surrender their arms, and return to their dwellings by the 1st of August. The leaders of the rebellion, however, were desirous of prosecuting the war, and the news of a victory obtained by the French fleet over the English and Dutch made them the less inclined to submit. William left Ireland on the 5th of September, and sent the earl of Marlborough to attack Cork and Kinsale, which was soon successfully accomplished. Limerick also, which had made a brave defence, capitulated. Of those engaged in the rebellion, 14,000 were allowed to leave the country with their families, and those who remained were granted the same liberty in the exercise of their religion which they had enjoyed in the reign of Charles II. The conduct of the queen while regent, merited the highest praise. Though harassed by anxiety for the dangers to which her husband and father were exposed, threatened with an insurrection by the Jacobites, and an invasion by the French, she concealed her fears, and, with the utmost prudence, gave the necessary orders, and used the most proper precautions.

97. Many of the Highlanders still resisted William's authority, and the earl of Breadalbane undertook to bring the clans to submission, by distributing money among the chieftains. £15,000 was remitted for this purpose; but the scheme was found impracticable. Macdonald of Glencoe, in particular, opposed, and used his influence to

frustrate the plan; and, in revenge, the earl sought his ruin. Indemnity was offered to all who had been in arms against William, provided they submitted before the end of December; and military execution was threatened against those who should stand out after that time. Macdonald went to Fort-William on the last day of the month, but the governor was not authorised to administer the oaths; and he proceeded to Inverary, where he arrived, though the ground was covered with snow, the day after the time prescribed had elapsed. The sheriff, in consideration of his disappointment at Fort-William, administered the oaths, and he returned with his adherents, confiding in the protection to which their submission entitled them. Instead of this, a warrant for his destruction was signed by the king, at the suggestion of Breadalbane, who represented Glencoe as an incorrigible rebel. In the beginning of February, a company of soldiers was marched by Captain Campbell into the valley of Glencoe, on pretence of levying arrears of taxes, and as he was related to young Macdonald's wife and professed friendly intentions, they received for fifteen days the most cordial hospitality. Macdonald parted with his perfidious guest on the evening of the 15th February, with mutual expressions of regard, but the young Macdonalds perceiving the guards doubled, suspected treachery, and farther observation confirmed their suspicions. On hastening to give warning of the danger, they saw the house surrounded, and heard from the discharge of muskets, and the shrieks of agony, that the work of slaughter was begun. Macdonald was shot through the head, and fell into the arms of his wife, who died next day of horror for her husband's fate. Women fell, protecting their children, and children were stabbed, imploring mercy. It had been intended to murder all the males in the valley, amounting to 200; of these 160 escaped the sword from the passes not being secured; but many of them perished in the mountains, from the want of food and from excessive cold. After the massacre had been effected, Campbell ordered the

as to be burned, and seized all the cattle found in the
y, leaving the helpless women and children, whom he
deprived of their fathers and husbands, exposed with-
out food or shelter to the inclemency of the season. This
massacre, while it terrified the Jacobites into sub-
mission, excited in them an insurmountable aversion to
government of William, under whose sanction it had
perpetrated; and though, alarmed at the outcry, he
denied that he had signed the warrant without know-
ing the purport of it, yet, as he did not severely punish
those concerned in putting it into execution, the imputa-
tion of treachery and cruelty must adhere to his character.

. Having equipped a formidable fleet, William em-
barked for Holland, March 5th, to assist the confederacy
in France; and Louis resolved to invade England
in his absence, to attempt once more to regain the
throne for James. A powerful army and fleet were pre-
pared, of which the queen was soon informed, and gave
orders to Admiral Russel to put to sea with all expedi-
ence. He encountered the enemy near Cape la Hogue,
a furious engagement took place, in which the Eng-
lish were victorious. This defeat was mortifying to
Louis, and entirely frustrated the hopes of James, who
at this time gave up all expectations of being restored
to the throne; though various plots were afterwards con-
ducted by his adherents to assassinate William, which
procured the ruin of the conspirators. While Wil-
liam's attention was engrossed with the affairs of the
continent, where the allies continued to prosecute the
war with France, England was disturbed by dissension
and discontent. William was accused of sacrificing the
interests of England to promote those of his native country;
expending their treasure in paying foreign troops; and
shedding the blood of their bravest countrymen in quarrels
in which they had no concern. They complained that
their taxes were increased, and would continue to
increase, from the dangerous expedient of borrowing
money, they were supplanted in their commerce by allies

who were protected at their expense; and that the ministry's want of foresight was likely to become as pernicious to the nation, as if they intended its destruction. William heard these complaints with the utmost indifference: his motive in accepting the crown was his ambitious desire to balance the power of Europe; and, provided he was furnished with supplies for promoting this object, he concerned himself little with the internal policy of the kingdom.

99. Immorality spread over the kingdom. The practice of bribing a majority in parliament, which had become general, had a pernicious influence on the morals of the people: patriotism was considered an ideal virtue, and seemed altogether banished; while ignorance and profligacy prevailed. The violent discussions of the different factions gave great uneasiness to William, and he remained in England only from necessity, his seasons of relaxation being spent in Holland. The queen died of small-pox, December 28th, 1694, at which event the king was so much affected, that for some time he was unable to attend to public business. She died in the thirty-third year of her age, and sixth of her reign. She was tall and well-proportioned, her features mild and agreeable, and her air dignified. She was a zealous Protestant, and strict in the performance of her devotional duties. Her temper was naturally calm and serene, and she seemed to have imbibed the apathy of her husband's character to such a degree as to stifle the emotions of natural affection in her heart, so that she ascended without compunction the throne of which her father had been deprived; and treated her sister with marked indifference.

100. War with France continued till 1697, when it was terminated by the treaty of Ryswick; and all the advantage England obtained for her immense expenditure of blood and treasure, was the acknowledgement by Louis, of William's title to the crown. William returned to England in November, and was again hailed as the *deliverer of the country*. He was soon however opposed

in his desire to maintain, in time of peace, a large standing army; and, to his great mortification, a bill was passed to disband all foreign, and limiting the number of English troops to be retained, to 10,000. Parliament then examined into the debts of the nation, and devised means for raising the supplies, which for the ensuing year amounted to £5,000,000. An address was presented to the king, representing the degeneracy of the age, and beseeching him to command all judges and magistrates to put in execution the laws against profaneness and immorality. To this he willingly agreed; and a society was formed for the reformation of manners, which he countenanced. It was at this time that Dr Thomas Bray formed a plan for propagating the gospel in foreign countries. The design was encouraged by contributions, and missionaries were sent to the British colonies in America.

101. The Scottish company, established for trading with Africa and the Indies, had completed a settlement on the coast of Darien, which was remonstrated against as an encroachment on the Spanish dominions in America, and also met with much opposition from the Dutch East India company. The adventurers were threatened with ruin, and petitioned the king to vindicate the privileges he had granted them; but he was resolved to compel them to relinquish the settlement, and, understanding that their provisions were nearly consumed, he prohibited the governors of Jamaica, and of the English settlements in America, from supplying them, or holding any intercourse with them. Most of the principal families of Scotland had been induced, by the prospect of obtaining wealth, to engage in the enterprise, and had embarked in it large sums of money; and indignation at the king's injustice and inhumanity, was so great and so general over the kingdom, that had their power corresponded with their inclination, a rebellion would have ensued. The disputes also of the different factions, regarding the succession; occasioned by the lamented death of the young duke of Gloucester, only remaining child of the princess Anne;

seemed to threaten civil war. The Jacobites exulted in the prospects opened for the prince of Wales, while the Protestants looked to Sophia, Electress-dowager of Hanover, and grand-daughter of James I. Parliament having deliberated on the subject, resolved, that, for the security of the Protestant religion, and to preserve the peace and welfare of the kingdom, it was necessary to settle the conditions of government, before fixing on the succession. It was accordingly resolved, that whoever should possess the crown, shall join in communion with the church of England; that, in case it descended to one not a native of England, the nation should not be obliged to engage in war for the defence of dominions not belonging to the crown, without consent of parliament; and that the sovereign of these realms should not, without like consent, leave the kingdom. These precautions, suggested by experience of the evils to which the nation had been already exposed, were extremely mortifying to William, on whose conduct and administration they seemed to reflect. The princess Sophia and her heirs, being Protestants, were then declared next in succession after the princess Anne. The bill formed on these resolutions, passed after some opposition; and a notification was sent to the Electress, who received, at the same time, the order of the Garter.

102. King James, after a tedious illness, expired at St Germain, on the 16th September, 1701. He had for several years taken no interest in worldly matters: religion had been his sole concern. His arbitrary temper had vanished with his greatness, and the monks of La Trappe, whom he often visited, were much edified by his humble and pious deportment. He was, according to his own request, privately interred in the church of the English Benedictines at Paris. Louis visited him before his death, and declared his intention of acknowledging his son, as king of England. He was accordingly proclaimed at St Germain, and his title recognised by the king of Spain, the duke of Savoy, and the Pope. This was complained

of as a violation of the treaty of Ryswick. The people were indignant that Louis should determine who should be their king, and William, ever eager to be at war with France, induced them to join him in desiring it: he did not however live to see this, nor the schemes he had devised for the ensuing campaign, put in execution. While riding from Kensington to Hampton-court, he was thrown from his horse, and fractured his collar-bone: it was immediately set, but the jolting of the carriage dis-united it, and it was again replaced. For some time he seemed to be recovering; but happening to fall asleep on a couch, he was seized with shivering, which terminated in fever, and he expired on the 8th March, 1702, in the 52d year of his age, and thirteenth of his reign. He was of middle stature, and had a delicate constitution. His manner was repulsive, except on the field of battle, when he showed great animation. His courage, sagacity, and perseverance, made him a formidable enemy, though he was seldom victorious. Ambition was his ruling passion; to gratify which he scrupled not what means he employed.

1701.]

ANNE,

[1714.

103. Princess of Denmark, second daughter of James II. by his first marriage, ascended the throne to the satisfaction of all parties. She assured the privy council of her desire to preserve and support the religion, laws, and liberties of her country, and to concur in whatever should be thought likely to promote the true interest of the kingdom. She received the congratulations of her subjects with gracious affability, and continued to all who had held offices of authority at the death of the king, possession of them. Parliament, which continued sitting, declared their resolution to support the measures already concerted for reducing the power of France. War was accordingly declared against that kingdom, in which the Dutch and Germans joined. Marlborough was appointed to the command of the English forces; he was afterwards made generallissimo of the allied army, and his success proved that no one better qualified could have been chosen. In his

first campaign, he obliged the French to retire, leaving in his hands all Spanish Guelderland. His succeeding campaigns were not less successful, and he gained splendid victories at Blenheim, Ramillies, Oudenarde, and Malplaquet. His success was almost unparalleled; in a war of nine years' continuance, he was never defeated in any battle, nor besieged any city without taking it. The standards and colours taken in Blenheim, were placed in Westminster-hall, and those taken at Ramillies in Guildhall. The duke of Marlborough received the thanks of parliament for his services; the manor of Woodstock was bestowed on him; on which the queen ordered a magnificent palace to be erected, and a pension of £5000 was conferred on him and his descendants. Louis in vain sued for peace; even Paris began to dread the approach of the victors, and, when threatened with ruin, was saved by the dissensions existing between the Whigs and Tories. The Tories opposed Marlborough, whom they considered an interested man, who protracted the war for his own emolument and glory; and the hero who had been lately so highly extolled, was now ridiculed and reviled.

104. The Union of Scotland with England, which had been long violently opposed, was at length completed, May, 1707. The terms were received with much dissatisfaction in Scotland, and indeed proved at first disadvantageous to the nation. The nobility murmured at their loss of dignity and influence, by the final dissolution of the Scottish parliament, and all were indignant at being deprived of their ancient and independent government. It was, however, notwithstanding all opposition, ratified by both parliaments, and the island was called "The United Kingdom of Great Britain." In the treaty for the Union, it was stipulated that the succession should be as already decreed by parliament; that the United Kingdom should be represented by one parliament, to which Scotland should send 16 peers and 45 commoners; that all the subjects of Great Britain should enjoy the same advantages, and be under the same restrictions with regard

to commerce; that the laws relating to public right and civil government should be the same throughout the kingdom, but that the court of session and other courts of law should remain unaltered; that all heritable offices and jurisdictions should be continued as before; as also the rights and privileges of the royal burghs, and that the crown, sceptre, sword of state, and all records and registers belonging to the kingdom should remain in Scotland. In 1708, a bill to dissolve the privy council of Scotland was passed by 50 against 40. The animosities of the nation were kindled anew at being deprived of the remaining fragment of their former government; and they were thus more disposed to favour an attempt made at this time by the Prince of Wales, to invade Scotland. Louis had supplied him with a fleet and army, which embarked at Dunkirk, from which they sailed, March 17th. The queen had notice of his intentions, and the necessary preparations were made to prevent his landing. Sir George Byng pursued the fleet, and overtook them at the Frith of Forth. The prince wished to go north, and land at Inverness; but the wind was adverse, and, after sailing about in tempestuous weather for three weeks, they were forced to return to Dunkirk.

105. A new scene of contention had been opened in Spain, in which England interfered, to attempt to raise Charles, son of the emperor of Germany, to the throne occupied by Philip, grandson of Louis. The earl of Peterborough had command of the English forces sent to the assistance of Charles, and succeeded in taking Barcelona: the conquest of Valencia followed, and he proclaimed Charles in Madrid, without opposition. About this time Gibraltar, then in possession of the Spaniards, was taken by the Prince of Hesse and Sir George Rooke. The success of this attempt, considering the strength of the fortifications, was surprising. It has ever since resisted all attacks, and remains in possession of the English; yet, when news of the conquest arrived, it was debated whether it was worth retaining, and was declared unworthy of

public gratitude. Prince George of Denmark died in October, 1708. He was an amiable prince, but not possessing great talents, and being void of ambition, he was not a shining character.

106. The success of Marlborough's last campaign in 1711, was as great as formerly : he gained for the allies a vast tract of country, and opened a passage into the heart of France, of which they might soon have become masters ; but his popularity declined in England, in consequence of the ascendancy of the Tories ; and, on his return, he was accused of receiving a bribe of £5000 a-year from a Jew who supplied the army with bread, and was dismissed from all his employments. His duchess, who had long been the queen's favourite, was also in disgrace, having disgusted the queen by her haughty and imperious temper. The Whig ministers were next dismissed, and their places filled by the opposite party. The queen was now anxious to free her subjects of a tedious and unprofitable war, of which they were heartily tired : the new ministry had the same wish, but the opposition given by the allies to the negotiations greatly obstructed the queen's desire to restore peace, and their obstinacy deprived her of advantages which might have been obtained. At length the treaty of Utrecht was concluded, by which Louis obliged himself to abandon the Pretender, to acknowledge the queen's title and the protestant succession, and to destroy the fortifications of Dunkirk. Philip, now acknowledged king of Spain, renounced all right to the crown of France, the union of two such kingdoms being thought dangerous to the liberties of Europe. France resigned Hudson's bay, Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and St Christopher's, reserving possession of Cape Breton, and liberty to dry their fish on shore. They also gave up to England their right to supply with slaves the Spanish settlements in America. One article of the treaty, honourable to the English, was the liberation of all Protestants confined on account of *their religion* in the prisons or galleys of France. Spain

ve up all claim to Gibraltar and Minorca. The treaty
r commerce was concluded too precipitately, and did not
ve satisfaction.

107. The queen informed parliament that the treaty
as now signed, which she hoped would convince all how
uch she desired the quiet and safety of the kingdom.
ie desired they would take proper measures to improve
eir trade and manufactures, and give employment to
e people, and exhorted them to devise means to prevent
e publication of seditious and scurrilous libels ; also to
it a stop to the lamentable prevalence of dueling. Ad-
resses of thanks and congratulations were presented to
r majesty by both houses, and peace was proclaimed,
ay 5th, 1731 ; for which joyful event a public thanks-
ving was appointed.

108. The people were now tired of the Whig party,
whom they imputed the burdens of the war. Harley,
terwards earl of Oxford, excited their complaints, and
e first triumph of the Tories and expression of the pub-
; in their favour, appeared in a matter which was of no
importance, but from the excitement it produced. This
as the trial of Dr Sacheverel, a clergyman of some pop-
arity among the high churchmen, who, in a violent
scourse, defended the doctrine of non-resistance, de-
aimed against dissenters, and exhorted the people to
fend the church threatened by its enemies. The most
olent paragraphs were laid before the house of Com-
ons, and the sermons declared to be scandalous and
ditions. Sacheverel was taken into custody, and brought
trial in Westminster-hall. The trial continued for three
eeks ; during which time the populace acted in the most
olent and outrageous manner. After a lengthened de-
te, he was found guilty ; though against the decision
any of the nobility protested. He was prohibited from
eaching for three years, and his sermons ordered to be
rned by the common executioner ; but this lenity was
asioned by the dread of popular resentment.

109. The same year an attempt was made to dissolve

the Union, which was still considered a grievance in Scotland. The imposition of the malt-tax encreased their complaints, and occasioned such violent altercation, that the bill was with difficulty passed. The Presbyterians were highly offended at the Toleration act, which took out of their hands the means of enforcing uniformity of worship; and still more at a clause which obliged them, as well as dissenters, to take the oath of Abjuration. This was intended to protect the episcopal clergy, a majority of whom, it was well known, would refuse to take the oath, which would have subjected them to be interrupted in the exercise of their functions by the Presbyterians, had not many of their own body been exposed to prosecution on the same account. Another cause of discontent was the restoration of the right of patronage.

110. The violent dissensions and intrigues of the different parties embittered the remainder of the queen's life, and greatly affected her health and spirits. The Jacobites did not fail to turn these dissensions to the advantage of their cause: they went so far as to enlist men for the service of the Pretender, which being discovered, a proclamation was made, offering £5000 for his apprehension, if he should land, or attempt to land in Britain. The Commons offered a farther reward of £100,000, and it was declared to be high treason for any one to enlist in the service of the Pretender, or of any foreign prince, without permission of the sovereign. The queen's health continued to decline: on the 28th of July she fell into a lethargy, from which she never recovered; and on the 1st August she expired, in the 50th year of her age, and the 13th of her reign. Intimation of the queen's situation had been sent to the Elector of Brunswick, desiring he would, with all speed, repair to Holland, to be in readiness to embark for England in the event of the queen's death. Precautions were also taken to secure the sea-ports, and the heralds were kept in waiting to proclaim the Elector as soon as the throne should become vacant.

111. Queen Anne, like several of her family, had virtues and talents more fitted to adorn private life, than to fulfil the duties of a public station. Her temper was mild and benignant, affectionate and faithful; but she was unfortunately deficient in firmness, to free her from the improper influence of favourites. She was zealously, and from conviction, attached to the church of England, and felt the warmest affection towards her people, by whom in return, notwithstanding the prejudice of party, she was universally beloved. No blood was shed during her reign for treason, and this last sovereign of the house of Stuart, if not the greatest, was certainly one of the most virtuous, that ever filled the throne of England.

1714.]

GEORGE I.,

[1727.

112. Great-grandson of James I., landed at Greenwich, 11th September, 1714, and ascended the throne without opposition. The Whigs took advantage of circumstances to regain power; and, by influencing the king with their prejudices, and attaching him to their faction, they governed as they pleased; and the Tories were entirely excluded from royal favour. The party-names were changed into Hanoverians and Jacobites. The people, who in general favoured the latter, were highly indignant at the king's partiality; and, had the Pretender and his adherents acted with judgement or prudence, a fair opportunity was offered for striking a decisive blow. On the meeting of parliament, violent measures were taken against the late ministry, several of whom were impeached, which increasing the tumult without, an act was passed, declaring that if persons assembled to the number of twelve, did not disperse within an hour after being required to do so by a justice of the peace, or other officer, and after the riot-act had been read, they should be considered guilty of felony, without benefit of clergy.

113. These proceedings increased public indignation, and the king declining to receive a dutiful address presented by the Earl of Mar, in name of the clans, that nobleman was prompted by the natural, though unjustifiable desire

of revenge, to put himself at the head of the disaffected party in Scotland. Under pretext of a grand hunting-match, he assembled a number of noblemen and chieftains in the forest of Braemar, to whom he declared his intention of hazarding his life and fortune, to establish the lawful heir on the throne, urged them to join in the cause, assuring them of support from France, and the certainty of an insurrection in England. This meeting took place August 26th, 1715, and it was agreed that they should return home and raise what forces they could before the 6th September, when a second meeting would be held at Aboyne. They met there accordingly: and, on the same day, the earl of Mar proclaimed king James, and raised his standard at Castletown of Braemar. The day being stormy, the gilded ball was blown from the top of the standard-spear, which was regarded by the Highlanders as ominous of evil, especially as something similar had happened when the unfortunate Charles erected his standard at Nottingham. The clans were raised on this occasion by the *Fir Cross*, which consisted of two pieces of wood in the form of a cross, the one end burned, the other dipped in blood. It was conveyed from house to house, and implied that those who did not appear at the time and place then mentioned, should suffer the extremity of fire and sword.

114. An attempt had been made by the Jacobites to surprise the castle of Edinburgh, of which, through the imprudence of those engaged in the enterprise, the government was informed in time to prevent its success. This open attack induced government to adopt immediate measures for defence: additional forces were sent into Scotland, and on the 30th August, an act was passed for encouraging loyalty. This was called the *Clan-act*, and tended greatly to abolish the feudal system, by diminishing the influence and control the superior held over his vassals. Mar was soon at the head of 10,000 men, and proceeded to Perthshire, James having in the mean time been proclaimed at Inverness, Aberdeen, Brechin, Montrose,

Dunkeld, and Dundee. Mar got possession of Perth, where he established his head-quarters, and made himself master of the country on that side of the Forth. He marched southward, intending to cross the Forth at Stirling, when, being informed that the duke of Argyle was advancing against him, he retreated, till joined by some more of the clans under Seaforth and General Gordon. Argyle's army was not half so numerous as the enemy's, yet he resolved to give them battle, and they met at Sheriffmuir, on the 12th November. The left wing of the royal army was speedily routed, and fled to Stirling, but the duke, who commanded on the right, attacked the left wing of the rebels, driving them to the river Allan. Returning from the pursuit, he found the enemy posted on a rising ground: the attack however was not renewed, and both parties withdrew, each claiming the victory.

115. Argyle, however, had all the advantages of victory. Divisions subsisted in Mar's army, and some of the clans had remained inactive during the contest; among those who showed an unwillingness to fight, was the celebrated Rob Roy, who furnished Argyle with intelligence of the insurrection. The Royalists lost above 500, and the rebels a still greater number. They returned to Perth, with their numbers greatly reduced by desertion; many of the Highlanders returning home without leave, to secure their pay and booty. The loss of Inverness castle, by the treachery of Lord Lovat, was a great blow to their interests. The Jacobites were still more unsuccessful in England: their plans were ill concerted, and generally defeated, government being always informed of their projects before they could be put in execution. The unceasing vigilance of Lord Stair, the English ambassador at Paris, procured constant and full intelligence of all the designs of the Pretender and his adherents, both there and at home; and many suspected persons were imprisoned.

116. The earl of Derwentwater, with some other noblemen and gentlemen, had advanced with a body of the

rebels from the borders to Preston, of which place they took possession, till, being surrounded by the king's forces, they were forced to surrender, on the day before the battle of Sheriffmuir. The common soldiers were imprisoned in Chester and Liverpool, and about 1000 were afterwards transported to America,—a fate, the dread of which had deterred many of the Highlanders from entering England. The noblemen and officers were sent to London, and basely led through the streets, pinioned and bound together. The Pretender had still relied on assistance from France, but the death of Louis put a stop to expectations from that quarter; the duke of Orleans, who succeeded as regent, not being inclined to hazard the peace of the kingdom, so lately almost ruined by war, by giving any countenance to his cause. Yet, after the defeat of his party in Britain, and when his presence there could be of no service, he, with his usual infatuation, arrived in Scotland, with only six attendants. He was met at Fetteresso, Aberdeenshire, by Mar and about thirty noblemen and gentlemen. Here he was proclaimed, and made a public entry into Dundee, 5th January, 1716. From this he went to Scone, intending to have his coronation performed; thanksgiving was ordered to be offered up for his safe arrival, and the ministers were enjoined to pray for him. Having spent some time in useless parade, and finding his affairs desperate (Argyle having arrived at Perth in pursuit of the rebels) he embarked at Montrose, with Mar and a few others, on the anniversary of the day on which his grandfather suffered on the scaffold. General Gordon marched northwards, quietly dispersing the forces of which he had been left in command, and so expeditious was his retreat, that Argyle could never overtake his rear.

117. The rebellion was thus ended; but the rebels were treated with great severity. The earls of Derwentwater, Nithsdale, and Carnwath, and Lords Wintrington, Kenmure, and Nairne, were sentenced to death. The countesses of Derwentwater and Nithsdale earnestly im-

lored the king's clemency, and the intercession of parliament in their husbands' behalf; but no attention was paid to their petition, and on the 24th February Derwentwater and Kenmure, both of them amiable and much esteemed noblemen, were brought to the scaffold on Tower-hill. Nithsdale had escaped the night before in women's apparel, provided by his mother. Upwards of 20 were executed at Preston and Manchester, and this severity, after the danger was over, excited such universal dissatisfaction, that the ministry, fearing to risk the election of a new parliament, repealed the Triennial act, and extended, by a new law, the term of parliament to seven years. They also, in return for the eminent services of the duke of Argyle, dismissed him from all the offices he held.

118. The king now resolved to visit his German dominions, with a view to avert the danger with which he was threatened by the confederacy of Charles, king of Sweden, and the Pretender. The act for limitation of the crown restricted him from leaving Britain; but the clause was without difficulty repealed, and he embarked at Gravesend, July, 1716, having appointed his son, the Prince of Wales, guardian of the kingdom in his absence. A new alliance he entered into with Holland and France excited great murmurs, as the commerce of England was prejudiced by the rupture with Sweden, and expense was incurred in prosecuting the war. The Czar of Muscovy agreed to assist the king of Sweden to raise the Pretender to the throne; but the death of Charles soon put a stop to these designs. The Quadruple Alliance gave no greater satisfaction to the nation, whose commerce was again injured by being involved in war with Spain. This rupture was expected by the Jacobites to be favourable to the Pretender's interests: a fleet, with 6000 troops and a large supply of arms, was provided for the enterprise, which was entrusted to the duke of Ormond; but a severe storm, encountered in passing Cape Finisterre, disabled the fleet; which misfortune, and the defeat of his arms in other parts, inclined Philip at last to sign the

Quadruple Alliance, and peace was again restored to Europe.

119. From the Revolution, government had been in the practice of borrowing money from merchants or companies to defray public expenses, which always exceeded the supply granted. In 1720, the South-sea Company, established by Harley, earl of Oxford, in the reign of Queen Anne, proposed to become the sole creditors of the nation, by paying off the debts due to other parties; offering, at the same time, to accept a lower rate of interest, which was, after six years, to be still farther reduced. As the Company had not funds sufficient for this purpose, they were empowered to raise them by opening a subscription to a scheme, from which immense advantages were held out by the directors. The public eagerly engaged in the speculation: crowds came to exchange government for South-sea Stock, and so great was the delusion, that in a short time the shares sold for ten times the original sum. A rage for stock-jobbing became general: new Companies started up every day, which engrossed attention, to the neglect of all proper employments; but, in a few months, what were fitly called bubbles, burst, and multitudes awoke, as if from delirium, to see themselves and families involved in ruin. Vigorous measures were adopted by parliament, to retrieve, as far as possible, this calamity: several members of the ministry, who were found to be involved in the infamous transactions of the Directors, were dismissed; and the wealth, so fraudulently amassed, seized for the relief of the sufferers. By degrees the ferment subsided, and public credit was restored.

120. Opposition was now made in granting supplies. It was observed, that the numerous treaties entered into by the king were inconsistent, and intended rather to promote the interests of Hanover than of England: that they were become allies of the whole world, for which they were obliged to pay. A dreadful plague raged at this time at Marseilles; and great precautions were taken to

guard against contagion: houses were built, to which infected persons might be conveyed; and none were allowed to come to England from France, without certificates of health. In 1724 the earl of Macclesfield, Lord Chancellor, was accused of fraudulent practices, by the sale of offices in Chancery to the prejudice of the suitors. He was found guilty, fined £30,000, and deprived of his office. In this year Philip of Spain resigned his crown to his son Louis, and retired with the queen to a monastery; but resumed it on the death of Louis, which happened soon afterwards.

121. After the rebellion in Scotland, an act had been passed for disarming Highlanders, which had been done to a great extent: and complaints were now made of robberies committed by armed men, whom the inhabitants had not means to resist. Marshal Wade was appointed to inspect the state of the country, and to devise measures for enforcing the laws, and, at the same time, protecting the people. This difficult task he accomplished with great skill: his conduct showed so much humanity and good sense, that he gained the favour of the Highlanders, while acting against their strongest prejudices. One of his most successful and beneficial undertakings was, employing the soldiers under his command to make the military roads through parts of the country hitherto inaccessible, and which had defied the approach of the Romans, and every enemy. These military roads still remain a monument of skill and industry.

122. The malt-tax was still unpopular in Scotland, and the imposition of a tax on ale threatened serious consequences. Glasgow, which in 1715 was distinguished for its loyalty, now began the opposition. The mob attacked and rifled the house of Daniel Campbell, their representative, who had voted for the bill. Two companies of soldiers were sent to disperse the crowd, which they attempted to do without firing; but, on being pelted with stones, they fired, and about twenty were killed or wounded. This so exasperated the rioters, that they

seized all the arms they could find, and attacked the soldiers, who retreated to Dumbarton. General Wade arrived with Forbes, the Lord Advocate, and quiet was soon restored.

123. War again commenced with Spain, and a fleet was sent to South America to intercept the Spanish galleons. In retaliation, the Spaniards attempted to regain Gibraltar; but both enterprises were unsuccessful, and a reconciliation was effected by France. In 1727 the king again resolved to visit Hanover. He arrived in Holland, and pursued his journey in apparent good health. On leaving Delden, his attendants perceived one of his hands to lie motionless, and called his surgeon, who attempted in vain to restore circulation; he had just strength to bid them hasten to Osnaburgh, and expired 11th June, in the 68th year of his age, and 13th of his reign. George I. ascended the throne with the character of a wise politician and a just and merciful prince. He declared his intentions to govern his new subjects as a common father, but he was misled by the suggestions of a corrupt ministry, and regarded with suspicion and dislike those who, but for his unjust partiality, would have been friendly to his government. He was married to his cousin Sophia Dorothea, only child of the duke of Zell, by whom he had one son, George Augustus, who succeeded him, and one daughter, married to Frederick-William, king of Prussia.

1727.]

GEORGE II.

[1760.]

124. Ascended the throne at a time when peace prevailed throughout Europe. He had the same disadvantage under which his father had laboured, of being a stranger to the character of the people he was called to govern; and the power continued in the hands of a venal ministry, whose actions were a disgrace to the nation. The kingdom was involved in useless treaties with foreign powers, to support which the wealth of the nation was squandered; dangerous encroachments had been made on the constitution, by the repeal and suspension of various

acts ; and a system of corruption had almost extinguished public spirit and a sense of honour ; while those who ventured to condemn or oppose these measures, were stigmatised as Jacobites and enemies to government. Notwithstanding the boasted economy of the ministry, and the establishment of the sinking fund, the national debt had been encreasing, and now exceeded £30,000,000 ; and they refused to account for the manner in which a large part of the revenue had been expended. The grant of £800,000 per annum to the king for life, was opposed as unnecessarily large ; but in that, and in every other demand for supply, the Court-party, at the head of which was Sir Robert Walpole, were victorious.

125. Great complaints being made by merchants of depredations committed by the Spanish vessels on the South-American coast, a negotiation was commenced to procure reparation, to which the Spanish court agreed, and confirmed the British right to free commerce. In 1730, seven chiefs of the Cherokee Indians were brought to England, and acknowledged, in the name of their people, submission to the king. Having assented to articles of friendship and commerce, they returned to their own country loaded with presents. England was at this time greatly exposed to robberies and incendiarism, arising from the absurd opinion, that laws necessary to prevent those acts of violence were incompatible with freedom,—an idea that destroyed all distinction between liberty and licentiousness. The depravity of the times appeared in the savage cruelty of the ruffians, who not only robbed, but wounded, and often murdered their unhappy victims. Sums of money were demanded from individuals, and on refusal their houses were burned to ashes. This crime became so common, that government was obliged to interfere ; and large rewards were offered for the discovery of the perpetrator.

126. But depravity was not confined to the lower ranks ; a fraudulent and avaricious spirit seemed to have infected many in higher stations. In 1707, the Charit-

able Corporation was instituted, with the intention of lending money to the poor on pledges, and to persons of better rank, on proper security. Their capital, at first limited to £30,000, was afterwards, by permission of the crown, increased to £600,000, which was procured by subscriptions. In October, 1731, George Robinson, the cashier, and John Thomson, warehouse-keeper, disappeared; and, on examination, it was found that £500,000 of the capital had been embezzled. Parliament was petitioned to make farther inquiry; and it was discovered that various persons of rank had concerted with Robinson and Thomson to defraud the proprietors. Two members of parliament were expelled for their share in the transactions, two for breach of trust in the fraudulent sale of the earl of Derwentwater's estates, and one for forgery. It was at that time asserted, that not a shilling received for the forfeited estates had ever been applied to the public service.

127. A scheme proposed by Walpole, for fixing the excise, by lodging all the tobacco imported, in warehouses, from which it would be given out on paying the duty, when the proprietor found a purchaser, excited so great a ferment, that the design was relinquished. An attempt to repeal the Septennial act also failed, and the country party, finding themselves outvoted in every debate, withdrew.

128. War was renewed with Spain in 1739. Admiral Vernon with six vessels took Portobello, and destroyed the fortifications. Commodore Anson was also sent with a squadron against the Spaniards; but, through the mismanagement of the ministry, he set out at the wrong season, and encountered severe storms, which dispersed his fleet. Sailing along the coast of Chili, he plundered and burned the town of Paita, and then traversed the Pacific Ocean in hopes of meeting with one of the rich galleons from the Philippine islands. In this he succeeded, and took the prize, valued at £313,000, with which, and other captures of nearly equal value, he *returned home*, having, by a voyage of three years, and at the

loss of a fine fleet, enriched a few individuals. An expedition against Carthagená was unfortunate. In attempting to storm the place, the troops were repulsed with great loss; and great numbers perished from the effects of the climate. The British fleet afforded no protection to the merchants, who were still exposed to the depredations and cruelties of the Spanish privateers; and violent discontent was expressed against Sir Robert Walpole, (who had been created earl of Orford), in consequence of which he resigned his office. A severe and long-continued frost during the winter of 1740, occasioned great distress to the poor and the labouring classes of England: many of the manufactures were put a stop to; fuel, provisions, and even water rose to such a price, that multitudes must have perished, but for the benevolence and liberality of the opulent, whose well-directed charity did honour to the English nation.

129. In 1742, Britain engaged in a war on the continent, to assist the queen of Hungary to regain possession of her dominions, of which she had been deprived by the Elector of Bavaria. Britain had no inducement to engage in this contest but to gratify the king by securing his dominions in Hanover, the safety of which depended on the balance of power on the continent being properly adjusted: 16,000 Hanoverians were added to the British forces sent to the Netherlands, and violent debates ensued in parliament, when the supplies came to be granted to pay these troops for defending their own interests. The new ministry pursued the same measures which had raised the clamour against their predecessors; and they succeeded in obtaining, in spite of opposition, the desired supply. The earl of Stair commanded the troops on the continent, and, with their assistance, the affairs of the queen of Hungary were soon retrieved. To prevent a union of the Austrian and British forces, the French assembled an army of 60,000, under Marshal de Noailles, and surrounded the British army near a village called Dettingen. The king and duke of Cumberland joined

them at this critical time, and found that a battle must be hazarded, notwithstanding the inferiority of their force. They were saved by the impetuosity of the French: a furious charge was received with such intrepidity by the British, that the enemy retreated with precipitation, with the loss of 5000 men. This was the last occasion on which a king of England commanded his army in battle. The French, not disconcerted with this defeat, projected an invasion of England, and Charles Edward, eldest son of the Pretender, arrived from Rome, where the family had for some time resided, to superintend the embarkation of troops for the expedition. Twenty ships, with 15,000 troops put to sea, but were forced back by a superior English fleet, and the vessels were much damaged by a strong gale of wind. Thus frustrated in their design of making a sudden descent, they openly declared war. An army of 120,000, commanded by the celebrated Marshal Saxe, was opposed to the allied army under the duke of Cumberland. Tournay was invested by the French king, and the bloody battle of Fontenoy was fought, in which the allies lost about 12,000. The loss of the French was nearly as great, but they afterwards took the city. The British were more successful in America. Louisburg surrendered to them, and they took two French and one Spanish ship, laden with treasure. A last attempt was made in 1745, by the young Pretender, to recover the crown which he considered his right. On the 27th July he landed on the coast of Lochaber, and was soon joined by 1500 Highlanders. His standard was erected on the 19th August at Glenfinnan by the marquis of Tullibardine, and he encamped in the neighbourhood of Fort-William. As soon as government was informed of his arrival, a reward of £30,000 was offered for his apprehension; and Sir John Cope was sent to oppose his progress.

130. Prince Charles advanced to Perth and Dundee, where his father was proclaimed king of Great Britain, and the public money seized for his use. His forces augmented as he proceeded, and he entered Edinburgh

17th September without opposition ; but for want of cannon could not take the castle. Many persons of distinction had by this time joined him ; his father was proclaimed at the cross, and a manifesto read, in which Charles was appointed Regent, and promise given to dissolve the Union, and redress the grievances of Scotland. Sir John Cope marched from Dunbar with 3000 men, and was met by the Pretender near Prestonpans. The king's troops were soon put to flight by the undisciplined Highlanders ; only 200 of the infantry escaped, above 400 were slain, and the rest taken prisoners. The artillery, tents, and military chests fell into the hands of the victors, who returned in triumph to Edinburgh. Charles conducted himself with the greatest moderation, and showed great compassion to the wounded ; he prohibited rejoicings for the victory, saying it had been gained at the expense of his father's misguided subjects. This victory, however, greatly promoted his interest at the time ; the zeal of his adherents was animated, and many, too old or too timid to engage in his service, assisted him with money. All Scotland, with the exception of the castles of Edinburgh and Stirling, and the forts in the Highlands, now owned his authority ; and it was resolved to invade England. Charles kept his court in Holyrood palace, where he held a council every morning, and gave entertainments to his followers. Some vessels arrived at this time from France with arms and money, and promise of farther assistance : Charles informed his council of his determination to advance into England, which was opposed by several of his followers : the debate was renewed the following day, and, finding him determined, they reluctantly agreed to proceed with him, having first dissuaded him from engaging with General Wade, till their numbers should be encreased. In the mean time, government used every means to oppose him. The duke of Cumberland arrived from Flanders with a well-disciplined army, and volunteers offered their services in different parts of the kingdom. In Scotland, several powerful chiefs armed

their vassals in the royal cause ; about 10,000 of those who, but for the indecision of the treacherous Lovat, would have joined the Pretender, were, by the zeal and address of President Forbes, brought over to the king's service. Admiral Vernon was appointed to watch the enemy's motions, and took several vessels with forces and ammunition intended for the use of the rebels.

131. On the 31st of October, Charles left Edinburgh by Dalkeith, where the rendezvous was, and his army, amounting to 5500, marched south in two divisions ;—one commanded by Charles, the other by the duke of Perth. They advanced to Carlisle, which they besieged, and in three days it surrendered ; but, to their great discouragement, instead of having their numbers augmented, they found that about 1000 had deserted from an unaccountable dread which the Highlanders had of entering England. The inhabitants of Carlisle were treated with the greatest gentleness ; but showed no disposition to favour the Pretender. Leaving a garrison, they marched from Carlisle on the 21st November, Charles leading the way on foot, and sharing all the fatigues of his followers. They arrived at Preston on the 26th, and on the 29th reached Manchester. Here there was some appearance of good-will to his cause, 200 were enlisted, and this success, so inferior to what had been expected, was welcomed as the beginning of a rising in their favour : but these hopes were disappointed ; signs of aversion to their cause appeared as they advanced by Macclesfield and Leek to Derby, and factions also existed among his followers. He was now in a critical situation, exposed to two armies which he had hitherto skillfully avoided, and within a hundred miles of the capital, where the king was ready to oppose his entrance ; yet was his confidence of success unabated, so much was he infatuated with the belief that king George was regarded as a usurper, and that the people of England only wanted an opportunity to transfer their allegiance from him to their native prince. London and other parts of England were indeed filled with consternation at his

approach, as they could not imagine such an enterprise would have been hazarded without certainty of support: but the temerity of Charles petrified his friends as well as his enemies, and prevented their declaring in his favour. On the 5th December, the necessity of a retreat was represented to Charles; this he keenly opposed, expressing his determination to proceed to London, till finding that none of his followers would be induced to alter their opinion, he was forced to yield, and they commenced a rapid retreat on the 6th December, thus abandoning all hopes of success in England.

132. The garrison left at Carlisle was soon obliged to surrender to the duke of Cumberland, who pursued the rebels, though without being able to gain any advantage over them; his troops were even compelled to retreat in a skirmish at Clifton-moor. The behaviour of the Highlanders in their advance had been exemplary, and even in their retreat, though irritated by disappointment, they refrained from outrage and violence. Charles could not conceal his dejection. Instead of taking the lead, as formerly, he lingered behind, as if willing to retard them, which conduct greatly dispirited his followers. Charles advanced to Glasgow, on which he levied a heavy contribution, and proceeded to besiege Stirling. At Falkirk he defeated General Hawley, but this was the last triumph of the rebels.

133. The duke of Cumberland, at the head of 14,000 troops, advanced from Aberdeen, and the rebels had a favourable opportunity to encounter them before they crossed the Spey, which they lost by the dissensions which prevailed among them, arising from disputes about precedence. Another great cause of the defeat was the want of provisions. On the 15th, the soldiers received only a biscuit each, and their strength was exhausted by a night-march, undertaken with the design of surprising the enemy; but which, from fatigue and want of union, they were unable to accomplish. They returned to Culloden about five in the morning; those who were able went in

quest of provisions; others, quite overcome, lay down to sleep. In about two hours, notice was brought that the duke's army was approaching: the chiefs and officers endeavoured to rouse and collect their men, but 4000 were absent, and these chiefly the Highlanders, on whom most dependence was placed. There remained only 5000 to encounter an army of 9000; and, though they seemed to forget their fatigue at sight of the enemy, so great an inequality soon decided the fate of the house of Stuart. The rebels were totally defeated, 1000 were slain on the field, and Charles was forced by his attendants to seek safety in flight.

134. There was a striking coincidence between his adventures after the battle of Culloden, and those of Charles II. after the battle of Worcester, though the young Pretender had to endure still greater privations, and for a longer period. For nearly six months he wandered in the wilds of Glengarry, and on the barren isles and shores of the West, taking refuge from his pursuers in caves and forests, and often suffering from hunger, thirst, and fatigue. For three weeks he was protected by outlaws, who, to procure for him a needful supply of clothes, killed an officer's servant who was taking his master's baggage to Fort-Augustus. At another time, when escape seemed impossible, 2000 men being engaged in searching the island of South Uist, where he was concealed, he was rescued by the intrepidity and presence of mind of the celebrated Flora M'Donald. For some time the search was relaxed by the devotion of Roderick M'Kenzie, who, happening to resemble the prince, was attacked by some soldiers, and desirous to make his death useful to the cause to which he had been devoted, he exclaimed when expiring, "Villains! you have killed your prince." His head was accordingly cut off, and sent to London; and for some time the mistake was not discovered. After a series of as perilous and romantic adventures as have ever been penned, Charles embarked on the 20th September, in a French frigate, at Lochnannagh, and landed in Brit-

tany on the 29th. The fidelity of those to whom his concealment was known, many of them of the lowest ranks, was honourable to the Highland character. Some who, at the risk of their life, obtained a scanty supply of food, yet scorned to procure what would secure to them unbounded wealth, by betraying their prince.

135. The duke of Cumberland stained his victory by the cruel use he made of it: the fugitives, incapable of resistance, and many who were merely spectators, were slain. The duke took up his head-quarters at Fort-Augustus, from which he sent detachments to lay waste the country, and put the inhabitants to the sword; his orders were promptly executed, and for many miles round the country was desolated. Several, who had given proofs of their loyalty by active exertions, lost favour by venturing to expostulate against these severities, among whom were President Forbes and Lord Forbes. Many noblemen and officers, engaged in the rebellion, suffered in different parts of England, and numbers of the common soldiers were transported to the plantations in America.

136. Regulations were soon after made, which tended equally to promote the interests of the Highlanders and the tranquillity of the kingdom. They were prohibited from wearing the dress of their ancestors, which had kept them distinct from the rest of the nation; and also from carrying arms: for the first offence they were subjected to six months' imprisonment, and, if repeated, to transportation to the colonies. This prohibition was much complained of; but it was thought necessary for the peace of the country, rigidly to enforce what was likely to subdue the martial spirit of the Highlanders, who associated with the wearing of their national garb, the use of warlike weapons. A regulation still more important and beneficial was the abolishing of the jurisdiction which the chieftains had over their vassals, and placing all alike under the protection of the laws.

137. The duke of Cumberland returned to Flanders, and the war was carried on with France, without any ad-

vantage, till 1748, when it was terminated by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, on terms by no means honourable to England. In 1751 Frederick, Prince of Wales, died, regretted by the nation, especially by those who opposed the administration. The French having made encroachments on the British settlements in North America, war was renewed with them in 1755. No advantage was gained till 1759, when Quebec was taken, though with the loss of the gallant General Wolfe. The whole of Canada was soon after subdued, and has since been annexed to the British empire.

138. War was during this time also carried on in India, where the British arms, under Lord Clive, were victorious. In 1756, the Suba or viceroy of Bengal marched with all his forces against Calcutta, then in a very flourishing state. After plundering the town, he attacked the fort, which was taken, after a vigorous resistance. Disappointed of obtaining the treasure he expected to have found, and enraged at the loss sustained in the siege, he ordered the garrison, to the number of 146 persons, to be crammed into a dungeon 18 feet square, called the Black Hole. In less than an hour the sufferings of the prisoners, (already exhausted by fatigue) became insupportable; want of air and the sultry heat of the climate brought on intolerable thirst and difficulty of breathing. In two hours more, a third of the number were dead, and most of the living were delirious; a supply of water increased their agony, while the inhuman guards derived amusement from their misery. They remained in this dreadful condition till next morning, when an order came for their release, and of the 146 who had entered ten hours before, only 23 were brought out alive, most of whom were in a putrid fever. Calcutta was soon after retaken, victory succeeded victory, and the English in a short time gained possession of a vast tract of country. The French contended for empire, but were gradually deprived of their settlements, and the conquest, in 1761, of Pondicherry, the *strongest* and most opulent of their cities, put an end to

their power in India. The native princes ceased to offer resistance to a force which they had felt to be so formidable, and all Hindostan acknowledged the power of Britain.

139. War was at the same time carried on in Europe. Minorca, which had been taken from the Spaniards in the reign of Queen Anne, and afterwards confirmed to the English by treaties, was besieged by the French in 1756. The citadel of St Philip was reckoned one of the strongest in Europe, but was not sufficiently garrisoned to sustain a siege. Admiral Byng was sent with ten ships-of-war to relieve the island, which failing to accomplish, he was accused of cowardice and misconduct, and brought home under arrest. He was brought to trial, and, though acquitted of cowardice, was condemned by the twelfth article of war, but was at the same time strongly recommended to mercy. This, however, government was determined not to grant. He delivered a paper, containing protestations of his innocence, and the intrepidity and composure with which he submitted to the severe sentence evinced no want of courage.

140. The king of England now entered into a treaty with Frederick, king of Prussia, to protect Hanover, which was threatened by the French. The astonishing exploits of Frederick excited at this time the admiration of Europe: he protected his subjects against three of the most powerful states of Europe, who had leagued against him. The duke of Cumberland commanded the troops in Hanover, but was obliged to yield to the superior forces of the French, and the Hanoverians laid down their arms. Mr Pitt, now at the head of affairs in England, sent a body of troops to preserve Hanover, and to assist the king of Prussia. The Hanoverians, roused by the treatment they experienced from the French, again took up arms, and, with the assistance of the British troops, defeated the French at Minden, in 1759. While the British arms were thus successful in various parts of the globe, the king suddenly expired, while taking a walk in

Kensington garden, on the 25th October 1760, in the 77th year of his age and 33d of his reign.

141. George II. was of middle stature, fair complexion, with eyes remarkably prominent. His temper was hasty, but easily appeased; and he was humane, temperate, and brave. He had studied the science of war, and corresponded on the subject with some of the greatest generals of the time. Like his predecessor, he had a great predilection for his native country, and sacrificed to its interests much of the blood and treasure of Britain. His death was lamented as a national misfortune, as it devolved on a young and inexperienced prince the burden of war at a very critical juncture. They dreaded a change of measures, which might have rendered useless all the advantages already derived by the war: but all these apprehensions, occasioned by ignorance of the character of the new king, soon vanished. The commerce of Britain had increased during the whole of this reign, which enabled the people to supply the encreasing national expenses, and to maintain extensive wars. A bill was passed in 1751, for the naturalisation of the Jews, which occasioned so much discontent, that it was repealed soon after. In 1752, the new style was introduced by act of parliament, the intermediate days between the 3d and 14th September being dropped. Genius, though neglected, especially after the queen's death, by those who should have patronised it, yet flourished by the great regard paid at this period to literature by the body of the people. Progress was made in mathematics, astronomy, and chemistry; music, painting, and the fine arts were also greatly encouraged, for which purpose the Royal Society was instituted. In 1755, Lisbon was destroyed by an earthquake. Two shocks had been felt in England, five years previous, on the 8th February and 8th March.

[1760.]

GEORGE III.,

[1820.]

142. Eldest son of Frederick, prince of Wales, succeeded his grandfather, in the 23d year of his age. At the time of his accession, Britain had attained a great height of glory and prosperity, by the brilliant achievements of her army and navy, and the flourishing condition of her commerce; while the highest offices in the various departments were filled by men of eminent talents. The young king was beloved for his private virtues, and the patriotism and excellence of the sentiments expressed in his first speech to parliament, confirmed all prepossessions in his favour. His marriage with the Princess Charlotte of Mecklenburgh, gave also universal satisfaction. She arrived at St James's on the 8th September, 1761, when the marriage was solemnised, and the coronation took place on the 28th. Mr Pitt having resigned, the earl of Bute, who had long enjoyed the king's esteem; took the lead in the administration. The war continued to be prosecuted with vigour and success. The islands of Martinique, Grenada, St Lucia, and St Vincent were taken from the French; Havannah, a strong fortress in the island of Cuba, and the Philippine isles from the Spaniards, besides seizing several vessels containing immense treasures, which almost ruined the commerce of Spain. The nation had now become tired of victories: France and Spain, dreading the encreasing power of England, earnestly desired peace, which was agreed to in 1763, England restoring part of her conquests.

143. At this time the British colonies in America were in a very prosperous state; and in proportion as they felt their own strength, they became jealous of the authority of Britain. France secretly encouraged this jealousy, and, though they still acknowledged British supremacy, they were ready to take the first opportunity of asserting their independence. This was soon offered by the passing of a bill, April 1764, imposing duties on goods imported to the colonies from islands not belonging to Great Britain, which duties were to be paid in

specie. This restriction produced great discontent, and the passing of the Stamp-act in 1765 roused them to resistance. The opposition proceeded chiefly from the northern division of British America, inhabited by the descendants of those who, in times of persecution, had left their native country for the wilds of America, where they might enjoy civil and religious liberty. They inherited the republican principles of their ancestors, and easily influenced the middle and southern states to join in denying the right of the British parliament to impose any taxation without their consent. The celebrated Dr Franklin was sent as their agent to petition against the imposition of the Stamp-duty. The tax was repealed; but, at the same time, the right of parliament to tax the colonies was asserted. It was not considered that it was the principle of taxation the Americans objected to; and when in 1770, under Lord North's administration, it was attempted to impose a tax on tea, the ferment was renewed, and at Boston the mob boarded some vessels which had arrived with tea, and destroyed their cargoes. The arrival of a military force suppressed the tumult, but the spirit of resistance spread over the colonies. It was proposed to fine the town of Boston for compensation of the damages done by the mob, to oppose which Charles Fox made his first appearance in the opposition.

144. On September 4th, 1774, representatives from almost all the colonies met at Philadelphia. This Congress expressed their desire to remain united with Great Britain, but, at the same time, declared their resolution to defend their rights and privileges. The reception given by parliament to their firm but respectful petition, occasioned the most violent indignation in the colonies. A meeting of Congress, February 1775, informed the people that their destruction seemed resolved on, and exhorted them to prepare for the approaching crisis. An attempt of the military to seize a quantity of arms occasioned a skirmish, in which a number both of the colonists and military were killed. This was the signal for a gen-

eral insurrection, and the standard of civil war was unfurled on the 19th April. A provincial army was raised, at the head of which George Washington was unanimously placed. Numerous forces arrived from England, and were successful in almost every engagement during the first campaign; yet the design of the war was frustrated by the spirited resistance of the Americans continuing unsubdued. New York was taken, and General Washington obliged to retreat; but even then, when their condition seemed desperate, their army not being above half so numerous as the British, they published their famous Declaration of Independence. In 1777 the army in Canada, under General Burgoyne, was surrounded by the American forces, and obliged to capitulate. France now entered into a treaty with the United States, as the American colonies were now styled, to assist them against Britain; and the hopes of the Americans were raised by the arrival of a French fleet in 1778 with troops, which however effected very little, not venturing to attack the English.

145. The nation had never approved of the measures of ministry which led to the war, and their ill success excited a desire for withdrawing the troops, and acknowledging the independence of America. A motion was made to this effect in the House of Lords; to oppose which the Earl of Chatham was carried, April 2d, from a sick-bed, to which he had been long confined. He had all along opposed American taxation, and pleaded the advantage that would arise from adopting conciliatory measures towards them; but now he protested against yielding to the power of France, and, while engaged in the debate with the duke of Richmond, he sunk in a faint. The house immediately adjourned, out of respect to this great statesman, who expired the following month. The war continued till 1781, when Lord Cornwallis, being attacked by the united armies of France and America, was forced to surrender, and, all hopes of subduing the Americans being at an end, hostilities were terminated by the separation of the United States from the mother-coun-

try, to the great joy of the Americans. Opposition against ministry was now so strong on account of the burdens of an unsuccessful war, that Lord North resigned, March, 1782. War continued with France and Spain. The French took the islands of St Vincent and Grenada, and afterwards made a successful expedition to the coast of Africa : they next made an attempt on the island of Jersey, but were defeated by the British fleet ; and Pondicherry, which had been restored to the French in 1763, was again taken from them. The Spaniards besieged Gibraltar, which resisted them for three years' : they succeeded however in taking Minorca. In October, 1780, a dreadful hurricane was experienced in the West Indies, particularly in Jamaica and Barbadoes : thousands were buried in the ruins, or swept into the sea by the swelling of the waves. The sufferers who survived the desolation presented a petition to parliament, who, without debate, granted £800,000 for their relief.

146. The contest of Britain with her colonies had excited deep interest in Ireland, where the cause and the rights of America were associated with their own. The king recommended to the attention of the legislature the state of Ireland ; and the laws restricting its trade were repealed in 1779. A bill had been passed for the relief of Roman Catholics in England from penalties to which they had been subjected in the reign of William III., and a proposal to extend the same indulgence to the Catholics of Scotland, excited such a ferment as to threaten serious disturbances in the capital and other parts of Scotland. The house of Dr Robertson the historian was only protected from the violence of the mob, by the drawn swords of the military. In 1780 Lord George Gordon put himself at the head of an association to obtain a repeal of the act, and declared in his harangues in the House of Commons, that he could at any time bring 120,000 men from Scotland to support his petition by force, if that should be necessary.

147. On June 2d, the day appointed for moving the re-

peal, a large body of the petitioners assembled in St George's Fields, wearing a blue cockade to distinguish them : they proceeded to Westminster-hall, insulted and severely hurt several members known to be averse to the repeal, and were with difficulty prevented from breaking into both houses of parliament. The mob was dispersed for that day without bloodshed or farther violence ; but on the Sunday following, the rioters attacked the chapels and houses of the Catholics, or those supposed to be favourable to them. The spirit of insurrection seemed to encrease with the progress of destruction : the release of the prisoners at Newgate had been demanded, and on refusal it was set on fire. The prisoners joined the insurgents, and the inmates of the other prisons were soon liberated. During the 6th and 7th of June the rioters were entire masters of the metropolis, which presented a scene of desolation such as had not been witnessed there for centuries. The shops were shut, and London was seen blazing at thirty different places at one time ; the terrified inhabitants hung pieces of blue silk from their windows, and chalked No Popery on their doors, to signify that they were friendly to the cause of the rioters. The riots were now declared rebellious, and the military ordered to act. An attempt being made on the Bank, regular firing commenced ; and London, which a few days before had enjoyed peace and security, presented the appearance of a city taken by storm.

148. At the commencement of the outrages, the Protestant Association solemnly disclaimed their knowledge or approval of the riots. The arrival of large bodies of troops restored order ; and on the 8th Lord George Gordon was arrested for high treason. He was brought to trial, and acquitted on the plea of insanity ; but several of his associates suffered on the gallows for their share in the insurrection. To the criminal negligence of the Lord Mayor much of the late excesses was attributed : so long had he delayed interference, that a privy council was called, at which the king was present, when it was thought neces-

sary to authorise the military to act without order from the magistrates. This was admitted to have been at the time absolutely necessary, but was afterwards freely censured as an undue exercise of the king's prerogative, and military law, which, if established as a precedent, might prove injurious and tyrannical: it was therefore proposed that an act of indemnity to the ministry should be passed. The petitions which had been the cause of the riots were now taken into consideration, and parliament passed a bill to prevent Catholics from educating the children of Protestants, which was however afterwards thrown out. One of the first who had courage to condemn the conduct of the magistrates on this occasion was John Wilkes, who had in 1763 made himself so conspicuous by a virulent attack on the king's speech at the prorogation of parliament, for which he was expelled the House of Commons, and declared incapable of being afterwards elected.

149. The situation of the Isle of Man rendered it a convenient receptacle for smuggling, and not being under custom-house laws, the utmost vigilance of government could not suppress it. To remedy this evil, the sovereignty of the island was purchased from the duke of Athol in 1765, for £70,000. Complaints having been made of the misconduct of the East India Company's servants, government interfered, and in 1773 regulations were made for the future management of the Company. Bengal became the seat of British government in India and supreme political and judicial authority was vested in the Governor-general and council, and the judges were sent from England. Such absolute power was soon found to combine the evils of anarchy and despotism, and a bill was passed to limit their authority, by subjecting them in a considerable degree, to the control of the British government. The impeachment of Warren Hastings, late Governor of India, on various charges of rapacity and treachery, excited strong interest in the nation. The trial was prolonged for seven years, and he was at last

acquitted on the ground that he had acted for the interest of the Company, whose servant he was. In 1782 the celebrated Hyder Ali, the most intrepid enemy that Britain had ever to contend with in the East, was defeated by General Coote. Hyder died soon after, and was succeeded by his son Tippoo Saib in the government of Mysore.

150. Britain had for several years successfully contended against the united hostilities of France, Spain, and Holland. All these powers were now desirous of peace; and negotiations had been made to effect it. America rejected every proposal of peace separate from her allies; and the treaty for general peace was signed at Versailles, January 1783, the terms of which were considered as too favourable to France and Spain. Fox censured almost every article of the treaty; and, after long debates, the opposition was so strong as to occasion a change of ministers. The members of the new ministry, among whom were Fox and Lord North, were of such opposite opinions, that it was designated the Coalition. They were supported by a majority of the House of Commons; but, being unacceptable to the nation in general, they were soon dismissed, and, in the end of the year, Mr Pitt, son of the Earl of Chatham, who had already distinguished himself in parliament, was placed at the head of a new ministry: shortly after which parliament was dissolved. Pitt was then only in the 25th year of his age; but the large majorities by which he was supported on the meeting of the new parliament, showed that the king's choice of a minister had given satisfaction. The former ministers used all their influence to disturb their successors, and compel them to resign. An address was even made to the king for their removal; but he declared that he saw no advantage which could arise from such a measure; and, as the disappointed faction soon lost public favour, Mr Pitt was secured in his office.

151. To prevent smuggling, a bill was brought forward to lessen the duty on tea, and the window-tax was substituted to supply the deficiency of revenue

This was passed, and was called the *Commutation Act*: Mr Pitt next introduced a new India bill, for the better regulation of the Company's affairs, which passed after considerable opposition. At the close of the session a very popular bill for the restoration of the estates forfeited by the rebellion in 1745, received the royal assent. Mr Pitt's bills for reform, and a commercial treaty for Ireland were rejected: several new taxes were imposed with little opposition. In 1786 he proposed to reduce the national debt, by appropriating the surplus revenue to the sinking-fund, which was to be exclusively applied to that purpose: the motion was carried without a division. During this year an attempt was made on the king's life, by a woman, named Margaret Nicholson, who struck his Majesty with a knife, while he read a petition she had presented to him. She was immediately arrested, and, being found, on examination to be insane, was committed, to Bethlehem hospital. The loyal congratulations presented on this occasion showed the attachment felt towards the king.

152. The Prince of Wales, having involved himself in debt, had broken up his establishment, and was living as a private gentleman, when application was made to parliament, and £120,000 was voted for payment of his debts, with an addition of £10,000 a-year to his income. Numerous petitions were this year presented to parliament against the African slave-trade. The first attempt to check this inhuman traffic was made by the Quakers in America, who not only petitioned the legislature in their behalf, but in many cases liberated the slaves in their possession. Their brethren in Britain zealously took up the cause; and a society was formed, who entrusted the business to Mr Wilberforce, member for York. The attention of parliament was particularly called to the dreadful sufferings endured in the passage from Africa, which loudly demanded an immediate remedy. A law was passed for restricting the number to be taken on board, and to provide for them better accommodation.

A proposal had been made by the ministry to form a settlement in New South Wales, to which convicts might be transported. This was agreed to by both houses of parliament; and, in May 1787, Governor Phillips sailed with upwards of 700 convicts, with whom he arrived at Botany Bay, the following January.

153. Britain had now for several years enjoyed the blessings of peace and encreasing prosperity, when the nation heard, with the greatest solicitude and alarm, that the king, whose health had for some time been declining, was now afflicted with a mental disorder which incapacitated him from attending to public affairs. Violent discussions took place relating to the appointment of a Regency, which were happily put a stop to by his majesty's recovery. The joy of the nation at this desirable event was extreme: a general thanksgiving was appointed, and the royal family went in public procession to St Paul's, to express their gratitude to the Almighty for the restoration of a monarch so much beloved.

154. In 1789 commenced that Revolution in France which was followed by events so extraordinary and momentous. Louis XVI. had the misfortune to ascend the throne at a time when the minds of the people were inflamed by representations of real and imaginary evils; and when the writings of Voltaire, Rousseau, Diderot, and others, had produced a complete revolution in the character and sentiments of the nation. All that had hitherto been held sacred was ridiculed as prejudice; a design to overthrow Christianity and every established institution was openly avowed; and a universal desire of change foretold the approach of some awful crisis. The assistance given by France to the American colonies, in their contest with Britain, was another cause of accelerating the Revolution. The troops sent thither imbibed more strongly Republican ideas, and, on their return, these false notions of liberty spread widely among a people ripe for rebellion; while the expenses thus accumulated, on an already exhausted treasury, brought the nation to

the verge of bankruptcy. In vain did the king, assisted by ministers of consummate abilities, endeavour to remedy the evils arising from the burden of public debt and embarrassed finances. The spirit of innovation, excited by the dissemination of infidel and republican principles, now broke out in actual rebellion, and Louis yielded to the wishes of the people, by convoking the States-General. This ancient council of the nation had not met since the year 1614. In its place the assembly of Notables had been substituted, the members of which were selected by the king, chiefly from the higher ranks, and who, by supporting principally the privileges of the nobility and crown, had forfeited the public confidence.

155. The National Assembly thus restored, held debates for the reform of government, and to establish a new constitution; and, on the court attempting to check their proceedings, the tumult of the populace commenced, and the military refused to act against them. Paris was now in the utmost disorder; the tithes and ecclesiastical property were seized, monastic institutions abolished, the order of nobility overthrown, and the power of the crown almost annihilated. The multitude having attacked the armouries, and seized the arms and ammunition, proceeded to the Bastille; and that strong prison, which had resisted a siege of twenty-three days, conducted by the great Condé, gave way in a few hours to the attacks of these insurgents. This was the prelude to more dreadful outrages, and the sanguinary spirit which so awfully distinguished the progress of this revolution already appeared. Distinctions of rank and opulence exposed their possessors to the greater violence of an infuriated mob, and many of the nobility and clergy left the kingdom. A scarcity of provisions in Paris, aggravated by reports circulated by the Orleans faction, instigated the populace to farther violence.

156. On the 5th October, a crowd of the lowest and most profligate of both sexes repaired to Versailles, and *forcibly entered* the hall where the National Assembly

was then sitting. They shouted and harangued in a tumultuous manner, demanding a supply of victuals, which was brought them. The arrival of the National troops, commanded by La Fayette, who had so much distinguished himself during the American war, dispersed the mob, and in some degree restored tranquillity. The night, however, was one of horror and dismal apprehension from the imprecations and threats of the multitude surrounding the palace. Before six in the morning, some of the most furious, having killed the sentinels, burst into the palace, made their way to the Queen's apartment, and pierced with their bayonets the bed from which she had just escaped. The destruction of the Royal Family seemed inevitable; but La Fayette succeeded in expelling the ruffians from the palace, which they were beginning to pillage. Louis acceded to the wishes of the mob, by returning to Paris, on condition that his family accompanied him; and at two in the afternoon he was conducted to his capital as a prisoner. An attempt was afterwards made by the Royal Family to leave the country; but, being discovered at Varennes, they were compelled to return, and were subjected to closer confinement.

157. The state of France now attracted the attention of all Europe; and in 1792, Austria and Prussia having declared war, the duke of Brunswick was appointed General of the combined armies, and entered France with the avowed intention of establishing legal authority, and restoring the king to the liberty of which he had been deprived, threatening vengeance, if insult or violence should be offered to the royal family. This imprudent declaration hastened the destruction of the unhappy monarch, by uniting the factions on whose dissensions his safety depended, and impelling them to desperate measures. On the 10th of August an attack was made on the Tuilleries, and the Swiss guards were massacred. The apartments and stairs streamed with blood; resistance was impossible, and the king with his family were in the Temple. When intelligence of the advance and first

success of the invaders reached Paris, another scene of horror ensued. The prisons, which had been filled with those suspected of attachment to the crown, were forced open in name of the people, and the prisoners murdered: during three days, the carnage continued without distinction of rank or sex. Among the victims was the Princess Lamballe, whose only crime was her friendship for the Queen. Royalty was then abolished, and the Republic instituted. So great was the rage for equality, that the common titles of *Monsieur* and *Madame* were disused, and the appellation of *Citizen* applied to all. Notwithstanding these commotions, which seemed to place France in the power of her enemies, she opposed to them a formidable force; and, while Europe anxiously awaited the issue of a decisive action, the king of Prussia and the duke of Brunswick, seeing their approach had aggravated the evil they wished to remove, gave orders to retreat. The French forces rapidly increased; Savoy was invaded and annexed to the Republic, and they proceeded to the conquest of the Austrian Netherlands, which the battle of Gemappe decided.

158. The victorious revolutionists now felt that they must maintain their usurped power by terror. The reign of terror was indeed begun, and in the bloody scenes which followed, from the recital of which the mind shrinks with horror, the execrated names of Robespierre, Danton, Marat, &c., appear as the inhuman instigators. In December, Louis (who during his rigorous confinement had been much employed in reading the history of Charles I. of England,) was brought to trial before the Convention. With the greatest calmness and dignity, he refuted the numerous charges brought against him; but a majority of five pronounced his condemnation; and on the following day this virtuous and inoffensive monarch was brought to the scaffold. With the exception of recalling her ambassador, on the deposition and imprisonment of Louis, Britain had, till this period, remained neutral with regard to France; but now, Chauvelin, the French ambassador, was ordered instantly to quit the kingdom.

159. Difference of opinion had prevailed in parliament respecting the French revolution. Burke condemned, while Fox approved of it. Societies were formed over the kingdom for the promulgation of revolutionary principles, to which the circulation of the seditious and infidel writings of Paine greatly contributed. Disgraceful riots occurred, and continued for some days, in Birmingham, in consequence of a meeting to celebrate the anniversary of the French revolution. Emissaries from France had been actively and successfully employed in exciting disaffection, which made it necessary to pass the Alien bill. The murder of Louis roused abhorrence of the principles which had led to it; and all parties rallied round the throne, to give their assistance to suppress rebellion, and preserve the constitution.

160. In 1791, Wilberforce had again brought in a bill for the abolition of the slave-trade, which was thrown out, and another passed, which it was hoped would put a stop to the traffic, by rendering it unnecessary. This was to establish a colony at Sierra Leone, on the coast of Africa, the soil of which was described as capable of producing almost spontaneously the various articles with which Europe was supplied by the West Indies, and a tract of land in the 8th degree N. lat. was allotted for the experiment. War had been renewed in India with Tippoo Saib, who, after three years' hostilities, was obliged to submit at Seringapatam, to the terms of peace offered by Cornwallis and Abercromby; which were,—that he should give up one half of his dominions, and pay above four millions sterling; and, as hostages for the performance of the treaty, his two eldest sons were delivered up.

161. From various propitious circumstances, commerce had for several years rapidly advanced in Britain, and new channels had been opened for the exportation of her manufactures. With the view of obtaining free trade with China and Japan, the embassy of Lord Macartney was projected; but the splendour of the retinue excited the jealousy rather than the admiration of the Chinese,

and was a means of frustrating the object of the undertaking. An armament had been sent in 1790, to compel the Spaniards to make restitution for the seizure of some British vessels, and for having taken possession of a settlement on Nootka Sound, established by some British adventurers, on account of the fur-trade. After great expense had been incurred by both nations, the Spanish court agreed to yield their claims, and to make the required restitution.

162. France declared war with Britain and Holland in 1793, on which a bill was passed to prevent traitorous correspondence with the enemy, and against aiding them with military or other stores. The naval and military power of Britain was increased, and the duke of York landed in Holland with troops to join the allies. They were at first successful in defeating the French army; but having besieged Dunkirk, so great a force was sent to oppose them, that they were compelled to retreat. The campaign of the following year was also favourable to France. The Dutch, seduced by false promises of liberty, rejected the protection of the British troops, and yielded, without resistance, to what they soon found to be the most tyrannical despotism. The Prince of Orange with his family found an asylum in England, and the duke of York, after being exposed to much danger by disunion among the allies, was obliged to return. Success, however, still attended the British fleet: several islands in the West Indies were taken, Corsica was united to Britain, and the French fleet was defeated by Lord Howe off Brest, June 1st 1794. A motion for reform brought forward by Mr. Grey, was opposed on account of the unsettled state of public opinion, which made it dangerous to introduce changes.

163. Public attention was about this time much excited by the trial of Mr Muir, advocate, who was accused of promoting reform societies in Scotland; and Mr Palmer, a Unitarian minister, who was accused of publishing a political libel. Both were found guilty, and sen-

tenced to transportation. Their followers, no wise disconcerted, held a meeting in Edinburgh, November 1795, called the British Convention, in which they imitated, as far as possible, the proceedings of the French. Such conduct would at any other time have excited only ridicule, but political excitement was then so great in the country, that it was thought necessary to bring some of the members to trial; who also were sentenced to transportation. Those brought to trial in England on similar charges, among whom were Horn Tooke and Thelwal the lecturer, were acquitted. This did not, however, convince the public of their innocence. It was declared in parliament, that the design of these persons, and of the societies with which they were connected, was to subvert the constitution; and a bill was passed to continue the suspension of the Habeas Corpus act.

164. The continental war had been from the first greatly opposed by part of the nation, and the discontent expressed at its unsuccessful prosecution was aggravated by a scarcity, attributed to this evil. The king was rudely assaulted on his way to parliament; and this outrage occasioned the extending and fixing of the laws against treason, and also putting a stop to seditious meetings and declamations. These bills were represented by Fox and Sheridan as infringing on the rights of the people, which greatly encreased the ferment prevailing among the lower and middle ranks; and the ministry became less popular. A motion for the abolition of slavery was again rejected, though supported both by Fox and Pitt.

165. The French Republic had now to contend against insurrections at home, as well as foreign invaders. The Vendéans opposed the Revolution, and, by prodigies of valour, they for a time repulsed their enemies, till at length, overpowered by numbers, their country was laid waste, and the inhabitants cruelly massacred. In their first enthusiasm for liberty, the French had declared themselves a military people, and that every man was willing to carry arms: this they were soon required to prove.

The levy at the commencement of the war for 300 men, was next year encreased to 1,000,000. The position, and the guillotine desolated the country; yet was the terror inspired, that none dared to complain. actions of Robespierre and his associates, who now erned France, exceeded in tyranny and iniquity all has been recorded in history. Religion and a belief Supreme Being were publicly and nationally abjured Sabbath abolished; and the churches ordered to be or used as places of amusement. The bishop of joined in this horrid renouncement of Christianity; those priests who attempted to exercise the duties of office were thrown into prison. Many escaped to land, where they were received with the greatest passion. The scaffolds daily streamed with the blood of those who were suspected of opposition. The queen, Madame Elisabeth, sister of Louis, and many of rank thus perished.

166. The prince of Wales having again become involved in debt to a great amount, his income, which had been £70,000, was, on his marriage with his cousin, Princess Caroline of Brunswick, April 8th 1795, encreased to £125,000, of which £78,000 was to be appropriated yearly for payment of his debts. The duke of York had married, in 1791, Frederica, princess royal of Prussia. In 1794 a commercial treaty was concluded between Great Britain and America, which tended greatly to promote the interests of both countries.

167. Prussia, though receiving large subsidies from Britain, had been a very inefficient ally; and, in 1795, made peace with France, by giving up her territories on the left of the Rhine. Spain also agreed to peace with France, on very disadvantageous terms. Holland was now united to the French Republic, the British fleets seized their vessels, and took possession of their settlements in the East Indies and at the Cape of Good Hope.

168. In 1796, the royalists of La Vendée were totally subdued, and the command of the army for the invasion of France was given to Napoleon Bonaparte.

of Italy was entrusted to Napoleon Bonaparte, who had already distinguished himself in a subordinate command. His unparalleled success in this campaign commenced that renown, which for several succeeding years, connected his history with the destinies of Europe. The king of Sardinia was compelled to sue for peace, and the Italian states to surrender, accepting the terms offered by the conqueror. The Pope alone resisted: but, his army being defeated, he also sued for peace, to obtain which he yielded part of his dominions; and, for having broke the former treaty, a heavy contribution was exacted, besides giving up a number of their finest pictures and statues. The removal of these monuments of art, which the Italians regarded with so much pride and veneration, to adorn the capital of France, was condemned by all. The victories of their countryman induced the Corsicans to revolt, and the British thought it prudent to evacuate the island, but retained Elba, of which they had taken possession some months before.

169. At the earnest desire of the British nation, a negociation for peace was attempted, though without success. The French, intoxicated with victory, and projecting farther conquests, would not agree to the terms proposed, and the ambassador, Lord Malmsbury, was ordered to leave France. Spain at the same time declared war against Britain. The disaffected party in Ireland, having requested assistance from France, a fleet, with a powerful force under general Hoche, sailed from Brest, 15th December, with the intention of landing at Bantry Bay. A violent storm dispersed the fleet; and, without attempting to land, they returned with the loss of several vessels.

170. The aspect of affairs in the commencement of 1797 was very gloomy. Involved in war which had no prospect of a speedy termination, threatened with foreign invasion and rebellion in Ireland, public alarm was greatly encreased by embarrassment in the public funds. The immense sums advanced by the Bank of England to be sent as subsidies to foreign princes, had occasioned a scarcity of specie, and the dread of invasion produced

such a demand as nearly exhausted their cash, and obliged them to refuse a farther supply required by government. Although thus embarrassed, the affairs of the bank were found, on investigation, to be in a prosperous state; and, to relieve the present difficulty, a bill was passed empowering them to issue notes in payment of demands made on them; and, for the convenience of the public, notes of £1 and £2 were for the first time circulated.

171. This alarm had scarcely subsided, when accounts of mutiny in the fleet spread still greater consternation. Complaints had long been made of the smallness of the pay, which continued the same as in the reign of Charles II., and of the unequal distribution of prize-money. Discontent at these grievances was aggravated by the artful dissemination of pernicious principles; and an anonymous application for redress being disregarded, the Channel fleet refused to obey the signal to weigh anchor. The seamen being now masters of the fleet, each crew sent two delegates; and a petition to parliament was drawn up in the admiral's cabin. On being informed by Lord Howe, that redress would be granted, and also the king's pardon for passed offences, they returned to their duty. A mutiny more serious broke out soon after at the Nore: the seamen, headed by Richard Parker, a man of bold and resolute character, made demands quite inconsistent with the necessary subordination; which being refused, they audaciously threatened to force compliance by blocking up the Thames. Their conduct was warmly reprobated by the Channel fleet: divisions arose among the mutineers, which occasioned bloodshed, and, despairing of success, they gradually returned to obedience. Parker and the other ringleaders were, on full proof of their guilt, executed.

172. France had long projected the invasion of England; and having now at their command the Spanish and also the Dutch navy, it was intended, before making the attempt, to effect a junction of the fleets at Brest. To prevent this union, Admiral Jervis was appointed to intercept the Spanish, and Admiral Duncan to watch the

motions of the Dutch fleet. Jervis encountered the enemy off cape St Vincent, and, with a greatly inferior force, gained a signal victory. Duncan was equally successful in the battle of Camperdown. Both admirals were raised to the peerage: the victories were celebrated by universal rejoicing, and a public thanksgiving was appointed. Another ineffectual attempt was made to negotiate peace with France. During this year the princess Royal was given in marriage to the hereditary prince of Wirtemberg, and soon after she accompanied her husband to Germany. Tumults arose at this time in various parts of Scotland from misapprehension of the militia-act, which were not suppressed without military force.

173. Ireland was now in a deplorable state. The spirit of disaffection, which the repeal of the penal laws against Catholics had been expected to remove, seemed rather to encrease; and the laws which still restricted them from sitting in parliament and holding offices of state roused their indignation. In 1793, they instituted a society called the United Irishmen; the design of which was to effect a separation of Ireland from Britain. The Protestants instituted a counter-society under the name of Orangemen, and the violence of party-spirit led to great outrages. A conspiracy was suspected to exist, but it was conducted with so much secrecy, that no certain intelligence could be obtained, till information was given of a seditious meeting at Belfast, and the papers then seized discovered the extent of the danger. Precautions were immediately taken by government; the army was encreased; martial law proclaimed; and large quantities of arms seized. Early in 1798, the Irish wrote, requesting assistance from France. This letter was intercepted; but, confiding in their numbers and enthusiasm, they determined to come to action; and while preparing for war were guilty of the most savage atrocities.

174. Their plans were in a great measure frustrated by the treachery of one of the United Irishmen, who

gave information that led to the apprehension of several of their leaders. The rebellion however commenced at Naas, fifteen miles from Dublin, on the 24th May. It spread over Wicklow and Wexford, and many engagements took place, in which the rebels were generally defeated. Their principal station was at Vinegar-hill, in the neighbourhood of Wexford; and here the royal army gained a complete victory, June 21st, which extinguished the rebellion in the South. Lord Cornwallis was appointed Lieutenant of Ireland, and influenced numbers to return to their allegiance. The French attempted to revive the rebellion, by landing some troops at Killala, August 22d. Their unexpected appearance enabled them at first to gain some advantage; but they were afterwards obliged to surrender, and some vessels with troops and ammunition for the use of the rebels were taken. A union of Ireland with Britain was now earnestly desired by many, as the only means of ensuring the tranquillity of the kingdom. Mr Pitt used his utmost endeavours to accomplish this object; but, from the opposition made in both countries, he was for the time obliged to relinquish it.

175. The power and territories of Britain in India was this year greatly extended, by the defeat and death of Tippoo Saib, son of Hyder Ali. The successes of the French had made him entertain the hope of recovering, by their assistance, the dominions which he had been obliged to surrender in 1792. On discovering his intentions, the British army invaded Mysore, and encamped at Seringapatam, which was taken by assault, and Tippoo perished defending one of the gates of his capital. Part of his dominions was given to a branch of the family, dispossessed by Hyder's usurpation; but the authority was retained by the British government. Uninterrupted success attended the British fleet during this year: not a vessel was lost, while the number taken was very great.

176. Britain being now left alone to contend against the enormous power of the French republic, the attention of *parliament* was directed to the means of defence, and a

pirit of patriotism was exhibited in voluntary associations and contributions, in support of the measures to protect the country, still threatened with invasion. A million and a half was soon raised in this manner, the queen setting an example, which was imitated by numbers of her sex. The additional supply necessary for the continuance of the war was raised by augmenting threefold the assessed taxes, called the Triple assessment. The income-tax was had recourse to in 1799. These defensive preparations precluded the idea of attempting invasion. An expedition to Egypt was planned, and, in the end of May 1798, Bonaparte sailed from Toulon with 40,000 chosen troops, immense stores of ammunition, and a numerous retinue of philosophers and artists. Proceeding along the Mediterranean, he took Malta, which had for 200 years been maintained by the Knights of St John against all attacks. Leaving there a garrison, he continued his voyage, and arrived at Alexandria, July 1st: on the 8th it was taken by assault. Rosetta was garrisoned; and, after defeating the Mameluke army at the battle of the Pyramids, he entered Cairo in triumph.

177. A squadron of the British fleet, commanded by Nelson, had been sent in pursuit of Bonaparte, and the French fleet was discovered in the bay of Aboukir on the 1st of August. The battle of the Nile commenced at sunset, and continued, at intervals, till the morning of the 2d, when the victory was complete. The loss of the French, besides their whole armament, exceeded 6000, while that of the English did not amount to 900. News of this important victory was received in England with joyful exultation, and produced surprising effects in Europe. The nations recovered from their consternation, and began to consider as not hopeless the attempt to throw off the yoke which the victories of the French republic had imposed on them; and Britain now found allies willing to join against the common enemy. The loss of his fleet, though felt to be a serious calamity, did not hinder Bonaparte from attempting to secure his conquests

in Egypt. He fixed his head-quarters at Cairo, and while he treated the prejudices of the natives with respect and even declared himself a believer in their creed; introduced science and commerce, by encouraging the exertions of the literary men who accompanied him, and opening channels of communication. He appointed provisional governments in the provinces, established schools and declared his intention to be, to free them from the tyranny of the Turks, and restore their kingdom to ancient glory. All these means to extend his influence and gain the favour of the natives did not prevent insurrections from taking place, and these were not quelled without considerable loss. On the 11th February 1798 he left Cairo with 12,000 men, and marched across the desert to El Arish, which surrendered on the 26th. Jaffa, (the ancient Joppa,) was taken on the 6th May by assault, and the carnage was dreadful.

178. Proceeding through Syria, they arrived on the 18th before Acre, a place celebrated during the Crusades by the bravery of Richard I., and which became again the scene of British valour. The Pacha of Syria having refused to negotiate with Bonaparte, he immediately commenced the siege, posting his troops so as to prevent the approach of assistance by land. The garrison, directed and animated by the gallant Sir Sidney Smith, vigorously repulsed the enemy. During a siege of two months eight assaults were made; and on the 8th May, 200 men who had entered the breach over the putrid bodies of the slain were driven back with great slaughter. The siege was raised on the 20th May; and, during the night, the dispirited troops commenced their retreat. Many of the sick and wounded perished during the painful march, and the soldiers, as if in revenge for the miseries they endured, continued the work of devastation as they were setting fire to villages, rich corn-fields, and to every thing that came in their way. Sir Sidney Smith, whose heroic bravery thus signally defeated the hitherto invincible warrior, and first checked that boundless ambition which

meditated the conquest of the East, had escaped from the prison of the Temple a short time before Bonaparte set out for Egypt. On arriving at Cairo, June 14th, Bonaparte published one of those false bulletins by which he so often attempted to deceive the world, and again resumed his efforts for the civilisation of Egypt. He retrieved in some measure his late disgrace, by a victory obtained over the Turks at Alexandria, July 25th; soon after which he privately left Egypt, and arrived in Paris, October 16th, almost as soon as the news of the victory was received.

179. France was at this time threatened with danger from domestic factions and foreign enemies, and the unexpected appearance of Bonaparte was hailed with the most enthusiastic joy. His brilliant victories in Italy were contrasted with the losses sustained there in his absence, and he was welcomed as the deliverer of his country, who was again to lead their armies to conquest. Advantage was taken of the state of public feeling, to dissolve the existing government, and frame a new constitution; by which Bonaparte contrived, under the title of chief consul, to secure to himself supreme authority over the nation. Efforts were now made to conciliate the different factions, the proscription of the priesthood was removed, the churches were restored to their original use, many of those who had been banished and proscribed were invited to return, and the proceedings against emigrants were closed. To confirm his power and popularity, Bonaparte seemed desirous of peace, and, in his own name, made overtures addressed to the king of Great Britain, dated 25th December. An official answer was returned to Talleyrand, the French secretary, January 4th, rejecting the overture on account of the frequent changes occurring in the French government, which made it impossible to effect a safe and honourable peace.

180. This determination to continue the war, called forth reflections on government, and an inquiry into the cause of the failure of the late campaign in Holland was

demanded. It being proved that neither loss nor dishonour had been incurred by the expedition, the Dutch fleet having been captured, and the opposition offered to our forces having occasioned the defeat of the French army in other quarters, the motion for investigation was rejected by a great majority. A failure of the crops from the wet season produced great scarcity, and the attention of parliament was directed to devise means for lessening the consumption of flour. A bill was passed, prohibiting bakers from selling bread till twenty-four hours after it had been baked; a temporary prevention of distilling was also proposed, and the importation of grain encouraged. An attempt was again made on the king's life as he entered Drury-lane theatre, May 15th, 1800, by a man named Hatfield firing a pistol. He was proved to be insane, in consequence of wounds received in his head, and was acquitted. The loyalty of the nation, and the affection felt towards his majesty were exhibited anew in expressions of joy at his escape. This year was distinguished by the union of Ireland with Great Britain, similar to that effected between England and Scotland nearly a century before. The three kingdoms were from this time styled the United Kingdoms of Great Britain and Ireland, the union commencing on the 1st January 1801. Ireland was to be represented in parliament by four spiritual and twenty-eight temporal lords to be elected for life, and a hundred commoners.

181. Having established tranquillity in France, Bonaparte prepared vigorously to prosecute the war in Germany. The Allies had recovered the whole of Italy, except the Genoese territory, and this also, after several engagements, being surrendered by Massena to the Austrians, the fate of Italy was supposed to be decided. But they had another general to contend with, whom they had never yet encountered without defeat. Bonaparte put himself at the head of a numerous army, and resolving to march expeditiously into Italy, he accomplished his wonderful passage over the Alps, and in the battle of

Marengo the Austrians were put to the rout. This victory undid all that had been accomplished by British subsidies, and the united efforts of the Russian and Austrian generals in the former campaign. Having reconquered Italy, and given orders respecting its settlement, Bonaparte returned to Paris. The battle of Hohenlinden, December 3d, decided the contest. The Austrians, finding it impossible to withstand armies always victorious, were compelled to accept of a disadvantageous peace in the treaty of Luneville. During this year the British navy undertook several expeditions, which were for the most part successful. In the West Indies, Curaçoa was taken from the Dutch. The fort and island of Goree surrendered to Sir Charles Hamilton; the forts on the coast of Bretagne were destroyed, and the coasting trade of the enemy intercepted; and in the Mediterranean the island of Malta was reduced.

182. The crop of 1800 was as deficient as that of the former year had been, and the high price of provisions occasioned great distress among the lower classes. Riots commenced in the metropolis, but were speedily repressed; and government used every means in their power to mitigate the calamity. Russia at this time made peace with France, and commenced hostilities against Britain by seizing and detaining their vessels. Prussia, Denmark, and Sweden were easily induced to join alliance with Russia, the two latter being eager to dispute the British claim of right to search vessels, and wishing to establish new maritime laws. Measures were immediately taken to repel this confederacy. A fleet sailed from Yarmouth, under the command of Sir Hyde Parker and Lord Nelson, and, triumphantly passing the Sound, attacked the Danish fleet stationed to defend the capital. After a battle of four hours, a number of the Danish vessels were taken or sunk, and, the remainder being entirely in the power of Nelson, he offered terms of truce, which were accepted. The Swedish fleet had been prevented by contrary winds from joining the Danes, and intelligence of the death of the

emperor Paul, influenced them to renounce the confederacy. Alexander, the son and successor of Paul, showed a wish to redress the violent proceedings of his father: he removed the embargo on British vessels and property, and expressed his desire to renew an amicable treaty with Britain, which was soon concluded, and afterwards acceded to by Denmark and Sweden, the loss of their West India islands having shown the impolicy of being at war with Britain.

183. In February 1801, Mr Pitt unexpectedly resigned, in consequence of differing in opinion with the king in regard to Catholic Emancipation, his majesty regarding farther concessions as inconsistent with his coronation-oath, while Mr Pitt was represented as having promised to the Catholics equalisation of privileges, on condition of their acquiescing in the Union. Anxiety of mind brought on a return of the king's former malady, which happily was of short duration; and on his recovery he appointed Mr Addington, afterwards Viscount Sidmouth, to be prime minister. In the first session of the United Parliament, Lord Moira procured an act for the relief of such insolvent debtors as had incurred debts not exceeding £1500, without fraudulent intention, and who were willing to surrender their whole effects to their creditors.

184. The French still retained possession of Egypt, and it being thought of importance for the safety of British power in India, to expel them from that settlement, a fleet was dispatched with an army of 15,000 under Sir Ralph Abercrombie. They arrived at the bay of Aboukir in the beginning of March 1801, but a heavy swell, which continued for some days, prevented their landing, and gave opportunity to the enemy more effectually to oppose it. Not intimidated by the dangers to which they were exposed, the first division of the army effected a landing, March 8th, in face of the enemy, and drove them from the shore. The whole army disembarked during the day; and on the 13th an engagement took place, which, though *attended with considerable loss*, was favourable to the

British. On the 17th the fort of Aboukir surrendered, and by the 20th Menou, the French general, had arrived at Alexandria with almost his whole force. A battle ensued on the 21st, in which the French were again defeated; but the British had to lament the loss of their able and beloved commander. Menou, still refusing to surrender, General Hutchinson, on whom the command had devolved, proceeded to Cairo, which soon capitulated, on condition that the French troops should be conveyed to some of their ports in the Mediterranean, and Menou, finding resistance hopeless, surrendered soon after on similar terms. Such was the result of Bonaparte's favourite enterprise, and boasted conquests in the East.

185. Rejoicings for the victories in Egypt, were increased by the prospects of peace, which was at last concluded at Amiens, March 27, 1802. England ceded the colonies obtained during the war, except Trinidad and the Dutch settlements in Ceylon. The Cape of Good Hope was to be a free port to the contracting parties, Malta to be restored to the knights of St John, and Egypt to the dominion of the Ottoman Porte. The extraordinary efforts made by Britain during this arduous war, proved the extent of her resources; rebellion only displayed the patriotism and loyalty of the people, while threatened invasion discovered the means of defence. Upwards of £22,000,000 had been paid during the war in subsidies to foreign powers.

186. It soon appeared that Bonaparte had no intention that peace should be of long continuance. He made unreasonable demands regarding the fulfilment of the treaty, and so roused the indignation of the British by his arrogance and injustice, that they zealously prepared for a renewal of the war. Numerous bodies of volunteers were raised, the middle and higher ranks making the greatest sacrifices for the protection of the kingdom. On the declaration of war, May 1803, Bonaparte, in violation of the laws of nations, ordered all the British then re-

siding in France to be arrested, and many of them were subjected to eleven years' captivity.

187. In the commencement of 1803, Colonel Despard and six men of low rank, were tried and convicted of a plot to assassinate the king and overturn the government, and suffered death for the crime on the 21st February. An insurrection took place in Ireland in July, which fortunately was checked before extending farther than the capital. In India, Sir Arthur Wellesley defeated two powerful Mahratta chiefs; the cities of Delhi and Agra were taken, and the province of Cuttack added to the possessions of the East India Company. The important Dutch colony of Surinam was also taken; and, in the West Indies, St Lucia, Tobago, Demerara, and Berbice surrendered to Britain.

188. Bonaparte's power being now absolute, his ambition prompted him to assume the imperial dignity, and the Pope undertook a long journey to assist at his coronation, which was celebrated in the church of Notre Dame, 2d December 1804. His title of Emperor of France was recognised by all the European powers except Britain and Sweden. On his elevation, he again addressed a letter to the king of England, professing a desire of peace, to which an official answer was returned expressing a similar desire. Mr Pitt resumed his former situation on the resignation of Mr Addington, 1804. The attempts made on the French flotillas, prepared for the invasion of England, were unsuccessful; but a great victory was obtained by Lord Nelson, off Cape Trafalgar, October 21st 1805, over the French and Spanish fleets. The combat was short but severe: the gallant admiral was wounded by a musket-shot, and expired in the moment of triumph. Britain having formed a coalition with Russia and Austria, Bonaparte crossed the Rhine, successfully attacked the Austrian troops, and obliged the Emperor to retire from his capital. His triumph at Austerlitz, 2d December, at which were present the emperors of Russia, Austria, and France, placed Austria at his disposal, and compelled the

emperor to accept of a humiliating peace. The battle of Jena placed Prussia in the same situation. Blucher was obliged to capitulate, and from Berlin Bonaparte issued a decree, prohibiting all commercial intercourse with Britain, and confiscating every article of British manufacture. The resistance of Russia arrested the conquests of the French, till the battle of Friedland, after which the treaty of Tilsit procured a cessation of hostilities.

189. Mr Pitt, whose talents and integrity had obtained for him power and popularity in a greater degree, and for a longer period, than had been enjoyed by any former statesman, expired 1806. His death occasioned a change of ministry, and Mr Fox, as secretary for the foreign department, took the lead in the cabinet. A proposal made to Fox, by a foreigner, to assassinate Napoleon, was communicated to Talleyrand, and led to a correspondence which gave the prospect of peace; but, after a negociation of some months, the treaty was broken off. Mr Fox died in September, the same year, and was interred in Westminster Abbey, near his political opponent, Mr Pitt. An attempt to pass a bill for enabling catholics to hold commissions in the army, occasioned the dismissal of the ministry: the Hon. Mr Perceval was appointed chancellor of the exchequer, and Mr Canning and Lord Castlereagh were made secretaries of state. Expeditions to Buenos Ayres, Constantinople, and Egypt, projected by the late ministry, were all unsuccessful. The new ministry sent a squadron to Copenhagen to demand the delivery of the fleet, of which it was supposed Napoleon wished to get possession; offering to protect Denmark from the attacks of the French, and to restore the fleet at the termination of war. On refusal, the city was bombarded, and the whole fleet carried off,—an action which was loudly exclaimed against, and which provoked hostilities from Denmark.

190. Napoleon now turned his attention to the Peninsula; having threatened to overthrow the house of Braganza, the royal family, escorted by Sir Sidney

Smith, sailed for Rio de Janeiro, where they arrived, January 1808. He then, by fraud, got into his power the king and prince of Spain, forced them to abdicate the crown, and bestowed it on his brother, Joseph Bonaparte, who resigned for it the sovereignty of Naples, which Napoleon before conferred on him, to his brother-in-law, Murat. He had already made his brother Louis king of Holland, and appointed his brother, Jerome, to be king of Westphalia. The tyranny and oppression of the French roused the Spanish patriots to resist their government, and they requested assistance from Britain, which was speedily granted. Sir Arthur Wellesley defeated the French general at Vimiera, August 25th, but the advantages of the victory were lost by concluding an agreement too favourable for France. The patriots afterwards sustained many defeats; but their spirit was not subdued, and they received re-enforcements of troops under Sir John Moore, who advanced to their assistance to Salamanca; when, finding it impossible to encounter the enemy to advantage, he commenced a retreat, exposed to the greatest privations and disappointments, from cold, hunger, the unfriendly disposition of the natives, and closely pursued by the enemy. Marshal Soult attacked them at Corunna, January 16th, 1809, as they were beginning to embark. He was defeated, but the engagement proved fatal to Sir John Moore, whose military talents and private worth were highly estimated. The French were again defeated at Talavera, 12th May, yet, notwithstanding these successes, the Allies were obliged to retire, and the British army remained at Badajoz for the rest of the year.

191. Austria, desirous of recovering her independence, thought the present a favourable opportunity to declare war with France; but it proved, as formerly, disastrous to them. Napoleon, a second time, took possession of Vienna, and the battle of Wagram compelled the emperor to submit to the humiliating terms proposed by the conquerer. One article of the treaty was his agreement to

give to Napoleon, in marriage, his daughter, the arch-duchess Maria Louisa. On his return to Paris, he was formally divorced from the empress Josephine, and received the hand of the arch-duchess, 1st April 1810. Napoleon now ruled with despotic authority: he issued new decrees for injuring the trade of Britain, which were strictly observed, not only in France, but in all the countries he had subdued. The lenity and liberal policy of his brother Louis, whom he had appointed king of Holland, not seconding his views, he deprived him of the crown, and annexed the United Provinces to France.

192. The failure of the expedition to Walcheren gave rise to violent debates in parliament; and a person named Jones, was committed to prison for unwarrantable freedom of remark on the subject. His cause was espoused by Sir Francis Burdett, who, in an insulting address to parliament, exclaimed against the imprisonment as illegal, for which he was sent to the tower. An augmentation of the smaller livings in the church of Scotland was granted by parliament this session; those under £150 being increased to that sum. In 1809, the duke of York, as commander-in-chief, was accused of improper disposal of commissions: the charges were refuted, but his royal highness resigned his office. A jubilee was celebrated throughout the kingdom, October 25th, on occasion of the king entering the 50th year of his reign. The death of the princess Amelia, November 1810, to whom the king was tenderly attached, produced such an effect on his majesty as to bring on a relapse of his mental disorder, from which he never recovered. The Prince of Wales was appointed Regent of the kingdom, and the care of his majesty was entrusted to the queen.

193. The Peninsular war continued with varied success during 1811 and 1812: the British troops were victorious at Barossa, Albuera, and Salamanca; Ciudad Rodrigo was taken by assault, and Badajoz was forced to surrender, after which the Spanish cortes conferred on Wellington the title of Duke of Ciudad Rodrigo, with command of

the Spanish army. The battle of Salamanca enabled the Allies to take possession of Madrid, from which king Joseph had fled, and obliged the French to raise the siege of Cadiz, and evacuate the south of Spain. The Russian campaign was favourable to the cause of the Spanish patriots, by withdrawing some of the ablest and most experienced of the French generals from Spain. Wellington defeated Marshal Jourdan, who had been joined by Joseph Bonaparte, in the battle of Vittoria, June 21st, taking all his cannon and ammunition. Soult was also defeated in several well contested actions, and forced to retreat into France, whither he was followed by Wellington, who concluded the campaign by a victory obtained over him at Toulouse, 11th April 1814.

194. Commercial disputes had produced war with America in 1812, and the conquest of Canada was attempted; but the Americans were repulsed by an inferior British force. They succeeded, however, in taking three British frigates, which excited a strong sensation, accustomed as our navy was to almost uninterrupted triumphs. The honour of the British flag was retrieved by the capture of the Chesapeake, in sight of Boston, and hostilities terminated in the end of 1814, the possessions and rights of both countries remaining almost on the same footing as before the war.

195. Mr Perceval, then at the head of the administration, while entering the house of commons, May 12th 1812, was shot through the heart by a man named Bellingham: the assassin suffered for the crime, which he had committed out of revenge for supposed injuries. The East India Company obtained, this year, a renewal of their charter for twenty years, retaining the exclusive right of trade with China, but the trade to India was thrown open to private enterprise.

196. The emperor Alexander, not having concurred to the extent of Napoleon's desire, in excluding British commerce from his dominions, war was declared between *France and Russia*; for the prosecution of which, immense

preparations were made on both sides. On the 9th May 1813, Napoleon left Paris to put himself at the head of the most numerous army ever brought into the field in Europe. The Russians had their head-quarters at Wilna, from which they retreated on the approach of the French, June 28th. After being thrice repulsed, the French got possession of Smolensko, but not till it had been almost reduced to ruins by the Russians, whose plan of retreat, and destroying every thing on their route that could be serviceable, was extremely embarrassing to the invaders, who were also harassed in their pursuit by the Cossacks, under Count Platoff. The Russians continuing their retreat towards Moscow, were attacked, September 7th, at Borodino, where a sanguinary combat was obstinately maintained from morning to night: the Russians remained on the field, but both parties claimed the victory, and the French advanced to Moscow, which, after some skirmishing, they entered on the 14th. On the 15th, Napoleon took possession of the Kremlin, the palace of the Czars, but found, to his dismay, that the city in which he had hoped his troops would find repose and enjoyment, after their toil and privations, was, by the patriotism of its inhabitants, devoted to the flames. The utmost exertions of the French could not save more than a tenth part of the buildings, and, enraged at the disappointment, four hundred of those supposed to have been concerned in effecting the conflagration, were ordered to be shot. The situation of Napoleon was now extremely critical; and from this period his reverse of fortune may be dated. In the centre of an enemy's country, whose forces pressed around him in encreasing numbers, while his own daily diminished from the want of provisions and of shelter from the inclemency of a Russian winter, he saw the danger of a longer stay at Moscow, and on the 19th October, his army commenced the most disastrous retreat on record. Their sufferings were extreme, immense numbers perished in the snow; their dead bodies, and the baggage and artillery abandoned by the sinking of the horses, marked

the route, which was a continued series of defeats and indescribable hardships. Napoleon narrowly escaped falling into the hands of the enemy, who endeavoured to cut off his retreat. Harassed on all sides, and defeated in several desperate conflicts, he forsook the men whom his inordinate ambition had devoted to destruction, and fled in disguise, accompanied by Caulincourt, to Paris; while of an army greatly exceeding 400,000, not more than 30,000 returned to tell of the miseries they had endured. This great discomfiture inclined other countries to unite in resisting the oppressor. D'York, the Prussian general, was the first to join the Russians. The French evacuated Berlin, which was entered by the emperor Alexander, March 4th, at the head of his army, and was soon joined by Bernadotte, formerly a French marshal, who had been, by the voice of the people, elected crown-prince of Sweden.

197. Though the return of Napoleon to his capital on this occasion, little resembled his former triumphal entries, he yet retained a portion of his magic power, and with incredible activity, set about repairing his losses. A new army of 180,000 was speedily raised, and having appointed Maria Louisa regent in his absence, he left Paris on the 15th April 1813, again to put himself at the head of what he still called the grand army. A bloody, but indecisive battle was fought, May 2d, near Lutzen, the place distinguished nearly two hundred years before, as the scene of the victory and death of Gustavus Adolphus. Another desperate engagement took place at Bautzen, on the 20th, the result of which was the advance of the French over the Elbe, and establishing their head-quarters at Dresden. Napoleon was now, however, so far aware of the difficulties that surrounded him, as to desire peace, and proposed, through the emperor of Austria, a cessation of hostilities. This was agreed to, and a congress was held at Prague, to negotiate a general peace, which the unreasonable demands of Napoleon prevented. On the renewal of hostilities, August 17th, Austria joined the

es. On the 26th they made an unsuccessful attack on Dresden, and were obliged to retreat, with great loss, on the 28th, after a general engagement, in which Moreau, celebrated republican general, who had returned from America to join Bernadotte, was mortally wounded. The defeat of the other divisions of the French army, more than compensated to the Allies for their failure at Dresden, obliged Napoleon, who had received a fresh levy of troops, procured by the empress, to risk another engagement near Leipsic, which commenced October 16th. This memorable battle, which decided the fate of Europe, was continued for three days, with great carnage on both sides; but the defection of the German troops at last decided the contest in favour of the allies, who triumphantly entered Leipsic two hours after Napoleon had fled from it, and took prisoners the king of Saxony and all his court, besides 30,000 of the French. The Bavarians, who had also joined the allies, attempted to intercept the retreat of the French at Frankfort, but were repulsed with great loss, and the wreck of the second grand army reached Mentz in the beginning of November. The wing up of the bridge over the Elster, at Lindenau, when after Napoleon had crossed, left a large portion of his army exposed to the enemy; and on this occasion, as at Beresina, in the retreat from Russia, he was accused of consulting his own safety at the expense of his followers.

198. Important changes followed the defeat of Napoleon: the French were expelled from Holland, and the prince of Orange invited to resume his sovereignty. Sweden was recovered by the crown prince of Sweden, and the Confederation of the Rhine was dissolved. The defeated army approached the French frontiers on the east, and Wellington advanced on the south-west; and, while almost all Europe was in arms against him, he was betrayed by those allies who still professed to remain faithful to his interest. To oppose this formidable invasion, Napoleon had still influence to obtain a decree for 100,000 men, and he who had so lately been the arbiter

of Europe, and had disposed of crowns and kingdoms at his pleasure, was now about to make one desperate effort to prevent his own being wrested from him. Having committed to the care of the national guard the empress and his son, the young king of Rome, and the defence of the capital, he took farewell of them on the 21st January, the anniversary of the execution of Louis, and the next day joined his army.

199. A congress was opened at Chatillon, attended by envoys from Britain, Russia, Austria, and Prussia; but the unreasonable proposals of Napoleon put a stop to the negotiations, and he could not even obtain an armistice. Numerous engagements took place with the Austrian and Prussian troops, which were at first favourable to the French; but Napoleon having put himself in the rear of his enemies, they marched to Paris, which, after some resistance, capitulated on the 30th March. The entrance of the allied sovereigns into Paris, was hailed with enthusiastic acclamations, and cries of *Vivent les Bourbons; à bas le Tyran*. The senate was invited to appoint a provisional government, and prepare a new constitution, which the allies promised to recognise; but they declared their resolution not to treat with Napoleon or any of his family. At the head of the provisional government was Talleyrand, and on the 2d April, the senate absolved the army and people from their allegiance to the emperor, who was declared to have forfeited his right to the throne. Napoleon was hastening to Paris, when informed of its surrender, and on the 31st March he repaired to Fontainebleau, from which, on the 4th April, he drew up and signed his abdication in favour of his son. This being rejected, he, on the 11th, renounced for himself and heirs the thrones of France and Italy. He was allowed to retain the title of Emperor, with the sovereignty of the isle of Elba, and a pension of 2,000,000 francs. On the 20th April, he left Fontainebleau, escorted by commissioners from the allied powers, and on the 28th embarked from Frejus in an English frigate, accompanied by 400 of his

chosen followers. The empress had previously been conducted to Vienna.

200. Louis, the brother of the late king, who had for some years resided at Hartwell, in Buckinghamshire, was invited to ascend the throne of his ancestors, and he made his first appearance, after assuming the royal dignity, in a public entry, April 20th, into the capital of England. The Prince Regent joined the procession, and Louis received the enthusiastic congratulations of the nation which had befriended his cause, when all Europe was opposed to him. He sailed from Dover on the 24th, and on the 3d May he made his solemn entry into Paris. On the 30th, a treaty of general pacification was signed at Paris, the terms of which showed the moderation of the allies, and their generosity to a vanquished enemy. In the beginning of June, the emperor of Russia, king of Prussia, Count Platoff, Blucher, and several other distinguished characters, visited England. They entered London on the 8th June, where they were received with all the respect due to their rank. They remained three weeks, and visited many of the principal places of the kingdom. During their stay, peace was proclaimed, which diffused general satisfaction. The 7th July was appointed as a day of general thanksgiving for the restoration of peace; on which occasion, the Prince Regent went, with both houses of parliament, in solemn procession, to St Paul's. On the 1st August, the centenary of the accession of the house of Hanover, was celebrated with great splendour in London and throughout the kingdom. The important services of Wellington were rewarded by the Prince Regent conferring on him the titles of duke and marquis, and a grant from parliament of £400,000 to support his rank.

201. Europe had scarcely begun to enjoy the blessings of peace, and the warriors to return to their homes, when the unwelcome tidings spread like lightning, that the disturber of peace had again appeared to inflict farther miseries. Having augmented his guards to 900, he left

Elba on the 26th February 1815, and on the 1st March, landed near Cannes. He advanced by Grenoble and Lyons, being joined by the troops sent to oppose him, and on the 20th he entered Paris, where he was received with the same expressions of joy with which the Bourbons had been welcomed the year previous. Louis, deserted by most of those in whom he had placed confidence, had left the Tuilleries on the night of the 19th, and retired to the Netherlands. Napoleon, informed of his departure, hastened to take possession of the Tuilleries, and the shouts of the national guards, which on the 19th had been *Vive le Roi*, were on the 20th changed into *Vive l'Empereur*. On the 21st he was at his favourite employment of reviewing his troops, and when about to lead the remnant of these devoted men to destruction, (such was their blind enthusiasm,) he seemed again to be hailed as the deliverer of his country. He addressed letters to the allied powers, asserting that he had been recalled by the unanimous voice of the nation, and expressing his desire of peace. The congress at Vienna published a declaration, 13th March, in which Napoleon was designated the enemy of the human race, who, by his violation of treaty, had forfeited all claims to forbearance, and by invading France had exposed himself to public vengeance. They also expressed their resolution to maintain the treaty of Paris, and to unite their forces against all attempts to infringe it.

202. Notwithstanding the boasted unanimity of France, dissensions prevailed in the south to a great extent; and Napoleon found himself involved in difficulties he had not before experienced. Another constitution was framed, and the oaths taken at a solemn assembly in the Champ de Mars, June 1st. The military force of France was still great, and they confidently anticipated the overthrow of the Allies. On the 12th June, Napoleon, for the last time, left Paris to join his army, which had preceded him to the Netherlands, where the British and Prussian troops were assembled. The Allies, animated

by one spirit, had made vast preparations to resist the common enemy. Britain, which all his efforts had hitherto been unable to vanquish, which alone, during the long-protracted contest, had escaped the general degradation, which had defended herself by her own resources, while she granted assistance to all; again liberally extended that assistance. The enormous sum of five millions was given in subsidies to the Allied powers, notwithstanding the opposition made in parliament. Napoleon joined his army on the 13th; he commenced preparations on the 14th, which was the anniversary of the battles of Marengo and Friedland, and the day following advanced on Charleroi, where he attacked the Prussian out-posts, and forced General Zeither to retire to the main army, stationed near Ligny, under Blucher. Against this veteran commander, Napoleon advanced on the 16th with a superior force, calculating upon securing his defeat before he could be supported by the British army under Wellington. The battle commenced at three in the afternoon, and raged with fury till night: at Ligny the combat was most bloody. Blucher led his troops in person, and in one of the charges had a narrow escape; his horse, being shot dead, fell upon him, and the French cuirassiers had passed and repassed him before he was extricated from his perilous situation. The enemy continued to pour in fresh troops, and the Prussians, after horrible carnage on both sides, were forced to relinquish Ligny, but retreated in good order,—the enemy not attempting to pursue them. On the same day, Marshal Ney, with a powerful force, attacked the Hanoverian, Brunswick, and some British troops at Quatre-Bras. The impetuous attacks of the French were received with the greatest intrepidity, though under the disadvantage of greatly inferior numbers; the British troops showed distinguished bravery, even after the fatigue of a long march, and Ney was eventually repulsed. In this fierce combat, the gallant duke of Brunswick and many able officers fell. The 17th was chiefly employed, on both sides, in making preparations for renewing the con-

test. The Prussians fell back towards Wavre, and the British troops were all assembled at Waterloo. Torrents of rain, accompanied by thunder and lightning, fell during the night, and the morning of the eventful and bloody day was dark and cheerless.

203. The memorable battle of Waterloo commenced before noon, by the enemy making a furious attack on Hougomont: a severe combat ensued, in which the British troops maintained their ground. The French advanced with impetuosity, confident of victory, and were met with the greatest firmness; fresh troops continually renewed the attacks with redoubled fury, and the conflict was maintained on both sides with a courage and obstinacy never surpassed. Desperate and repeated, but unsuccessful efforts, were made by the enemy, to gain the road to Brussels, and to effect a separation from the Prussian army. The French cavalry and cuirassiers could make no impression on the British lines, and were repeatedly repulsed with dreadful slaughter. Victory was yet undecided when Napoleon, defeated in his previous attempts, and dreading the approach of the Prussians, thought it still possible, by overwhelming numbers, to overthrow the British troops before their arrival. Charge upon charge was made against the whole British line, and this close and dreadful combat continued three hours; the troops, even when despairing of success, remained firm, resolved to perish at their post. The badness of the roads had so much retarded the march of the Prussians, that it was near five, when they began to take the position allotted them on the enemy's right. Not a moment was to be lost, and a conflict, as severe and sanguinary as any on that bloody day, commenced. On all sides the combat raged with violence, and the issue of the battle seemed yet uncertain.

204. At this critical moment, Napoleon, as a last effort, put himself at the head of his guards, made a desperate attack on the British line near La Haye Sainte, and succeeded in driving back the Brunswick troops. Welling-

ton, whose notice nothing escaped, threw himself among the troops, and animated them to return to the charge. The Prince of Orange, at the head of the Belgian troops, was wounded, in resisting the attack made by Napoleon in person. At this time the field exhibited a dreadful scene of carnage. Wellington had been compelled by the havoc made, to bring his reserves into action; and it seemed doubtful if his army could much longer sustain the unequal conflict, when his anxiety was relieved by the arrival of Blücher, about seven o'clock. For eight hours the Allies had acted on the defensive, and their ardour, which had with difficulty been restrained, was now gratified with permission to attack the enemy. Forgetting their fatigue, they rushed to the combat, and the bravest of the enemy fell before them. Retreat soon changed into disorderly flight, which Napoleon in vain attempted to arrest, by collecting some battalions of the guards; the cry of *all is lost* spread throughout the army, and the Prussians advancing to the attack, the rout became general. Wellington with his army pursued the enemy towards Genappe, and on the road met Blücher: they cordially embraced and congratulated each other, and the British army being exhausted with fatigue, resigned the pursuit to the Prussians, who continued it throughout the night, not allowing the fugitives a moment's repose. Napoleon, as on former occasions, deserted his troops, and, mindful only of personal safety, effected his escape by flight. He had scarcely quitted his carriage, when it fell into the hands of his pursuers; and among his baggage were found proclamations addressed to the Belgians, and dated from the palace of Laken, 19th June; so confident had he been of victory.

205. His return to Paris on the morning of the 21st, and the disastrous reports that quickly spread, occasioned the greatest consternation. The ministers assembled, but showed more concern to secure their own safety, than that of their beloved emperor, to whom three weeks before they had sworn inviolable fidelity. Instead of re-

ceiving the assistance he expected, he was again compelled to sign his abdication; and the despot at whose frown France was wont to tremble, and who so lately had been the object of their most enthusiastic admiration, was in a few days disregarded, and almost forgotten. Neglected and desponding, he on the 3d July reached the coast, in hopes of escaping to America; but finding this impracticable from the vigilance of the British cruisers, he surrendered himself to Captain Maitland of the *Bellerophon*, and addressed a letter to the Prince Regent, claiming the protection of the most powerful and generous of his enemies. Europe had too long experienced the dangerous effects of his restless ambition, to permit him again an opportunity to disturb its tranquillity: he was considered the prisoner of the Allied powers; and it was resolved to send him to St Helena. He was not permitted to land in England, but, with a small number of attendants, who were to accompany him, was transferred, August 18th, from the *Bellerophon*, to the *Northumberland*, which had been prepared to convey him. Thus sudden was the fall of this extraordinary man, who had used to the worst of purposes the most unbounded power and influence ever possessed by an individual; and he for whose ambitious projects Europe was a space too limited was henceforth to be a prisoner on a barren rock of the Atlantic.

206. The Prussians continued on the 19th to pursue the wretched remains of the French army. Wellington remained during that day at Waterloo; after which the Allied armies advanced towards Paris. Every exertion had been made to defend the capital, and commissioners were sent to request an armistice; but the Allies continued their march, and on the 30th invested Paris. Consternation and alarm succeeded their boasts of defence; and finding resistance hopeless, surrender was agreed to. A convention was concluded July 3d, by which the French army was required to evacuate Paris in three days, when the city and fortifications were to be put into the hands of the Allies. This capitulation saved Paris; and, on the

8th, Louis was again received in his capital with the acclamations of his fickle subjects ; but, though restored to his throne, his situation was extremely uncomfortable ; the country continued in a dreadful state of agitation, and the presence of the Allied troops alone prevented the outbreking of revolutionary fury.

207. A new treaty was adjusted and signed 20th November, by which France was bound to maintain for five years 150,000 of the Allied troops, who were during that time to garrison the fortresses on the frontiers, under the command of the duke of Wellington. An indemnity of 700,000,000 of francs was also to be paid to the Allies, and, to the great mortification of the French, the works of art plundered by them from other countries were to be restored. A Treaty of Alliance, offensive and defensive, was at the same time entered into between Great Britain, Russia, Austria, and Prussia. Russia gave up the Ionian islands, to be erected into an independent kingdom, under the protection of Great Britain. Hanover was erected into a kingdom. England restored to the Dutch their settlements in Java, also Surinam, St Eustatius, and Curazao, retaining Ceylon, the Cape of Good Hope, Demerara, Berbice, and Essequibo. The greater part of Poland was annexed to Russia, the emperor assuming the title of king of Poland. Genoa was added to the kingdom of Sardinia, Lombardy to Austria, and part of Saxony to Prussia ; and an Act of Confederation united the princes of Germany.

208. Before the nation could experience the advantages of peace, the evils arising from unprecedented exertions during a long and arduous war, were severely felt. The enactment of laws regulating the importation of corn, and intended to protect the agricultural interest, occasioned serious disturbance from being misrepresented ; while, from the depression of trade, the manufacturing towns both of England and Scotland were, during this and the following year, in a state of agitation. At a meeting held in December, at Spitalfields, to petition the Prince Regent, the populace were so much excited by inflamma-

tory harangues, that they proceeded to London, where their disorderly and outrageous behaviour was soon checked by the appearance of the military.—A new silver coinage was issued this year; the Bank-Restriction Bill was extended for two years, and an attempt to procure Catholic Emancipation was again ineffectual.—The marriage of the Princess Charlotte, only child of the Prince Regent, to Prince Leopold of Saxe-Coburg, took place May 2d, and in July following, that of the Princess Mary to her cousin, the duke of Gloucester.

209. This year was also signalised by a brilliant naval exploit. The depredations and cruelties committed by the pirates of Barbary, who not only plundered the vessels, but reduced to slavery the unfortunate prisoners, had long been a grievance. Early in spring, Lord Exmouth sailed with a squadron; but before proceeding to hostilities, he attempted to obtain redress by negotiation: the beys of Tunis and Tripoli readily acceded to his demand; but the bey of Algiers having, on the departure of the fleet, committed new acts of violence, Lord Exmouth returned with a powerful force. His demand for the liberation of all Christian slaves was refused, and the Dey prepared for resistance. The city and entrance to it being defended by strong batteries, the fleet suffered severely; but, after a cannonade of six hours, August 27th, the enemy lost many of their vessels, and had their store-houses, arsenals, and great part of their batteries reduced to ruins. This glorious victory secured the objects of the expedition; Christian slavery was abolished; the prisoners, in number about 1000, were liberated without ransom; and the Dey was obliged to apologise to the British consul for indignities to which he had been subjected.

210. Much distress prevailed in the beginning of 1817, from the want of employment, and the high price of provisions, arising from the deficiency of the crop the preceding year. Large sums were contributed by the wealthy for the relief of the sufferers, and great exertions were made to furnish employment for the poor; yet this

did not prevent the expression of discontent, and a riotous spirit was manifested in some districts to such a degree, that suspension of the Habeas Corpus act was resorted to. Meetings were held in Manchester and the neighbourhood, to petition against the suspension, and several persons were seized and put in confinement, in consequence of the seditious speeches they made on the occasion. As tumultuous meetings continued to keep the country in a ferment, it was thought necessary to bring some of the ring-leaders to trial; and three suffered death as traitors. The Prince Regent on his way to open the parliament was fired at, and though a large reward was offered, the perpetrators of the outrage escaped detection. Loyal addresses were presented to the prince on his escape.—The Roman Catholic emancipation bill was again lost by small majorities. A gold coinage was issued of *sovereigns*, value twenty shillings, and of *half-sovereigns*, value ten shillings.

211. The death of the Princess Charlotte, and her infant, November 6th 1817, plunged the nation into the deepest sorrow: pursuits of business and pleasure were for a time suspended, and all ranks mourned the loss of this amiable princess, as a national calamity. Parliament was opened by commission, January 1818, the Habeas Corpus suspension act was repealed, and the proceedings of ministry relative to the imprisonment of individuals during its suspension, were approved by a large majority; but petitions for parliamentary reform became general throughout the kingdom. Spain received £400,000 for having consented to the abolition of the slave-trade; a million sterling was appropriated to erect additional churches and chapels connected with the established church in England, and £100,000 was granted the following year to the church of Scotland for the same purpose. Several marriages took place in the royal family this year. The duke of Clarence, to the princess of Meinengen; the duke of Kent to the princess dowager of Leinengen, sister of prince Leopold; the duke of Cambridge to the princess of Hesse Cassel; and the princess Elisabeth to

the prince of Hesse Homburg. The expedition to the Arctic region returned towards the close of the year, without having effected their object, the farther progress of the vessels having been opposed by barriers of ice.

212. Queen Charlotte died on the 17th November, and the duke of York was entrusted with the care of his royal father. To the honour of the queen it must be acknowledged, that her own exemplary conduct, her steady and marked disapprobation of impropriety of behaviour in others, during the long period of her reign, had the happy effect of preserving the British court from the licentiousness then too prevalent in many others, and was of incalculable advantage to the nation at large.

213. The tranquillity of the country continued to be disturbed by tumultuous and seditious meetings, chiefly in the manufacturing districts. The most serious took place in Manchester, where a meeting was called by Hunt and his associates for the 9th August. The magistrates having declared it illegal, it was postponed; but on the 16th upwards of 50,000 assembled with unlawful banners, and, while Hunt was haranguing them, the cavalry approached, and seized him and some of his confederates. Dreadful disorder ensued; six persons were killed, and many more injured. Hunt was sentenced to imprisonment for two years and a half, and the others for shorter periods. The transaction occasioned a great excitement in the country: the magistrates and yeomanry were severely censured at various meetings, called on purpose to petition for inquiry into their conduct. Sir Francis Burdett addressed a letter to his constituents, condemning in the severest terms the measures of government, for which he was brought to trial; and being convicted of publishing a seditious libel, he was sentenced to be imprisoned three months, and fined £2000. Similar meetings were held in Glasgow and Paisley, which were fortunately dispersed by the military without bloodshed. The state of the country occasioned parliament to meet earlier than usual, and the Prince Regent opened the session in person.

Lord Grey opposed the address to the throne, and wished to pledge the house to investigate the late occurrence at Manchester, which led to discussions, in which Lord Sidmouth justified the conduct of the magistrates, and was supported by a large majority in both houses.

214. The duke of Kent died after a short illness, January 23d, 1820, and on the 29th his venerable father, whose health had been declining during the winter, expired without a struggle. This revered and pious monarch well deserved to be called the father of his people; for no sovereign was ever more deeply impressed with a sense of the responsibility of his station, or felt greater solicitude so to perform its important duties as to promote the best interests of his subjects. His firmness and integrity of principle kept him from yielding to the voice of flattery, or the threatening of danger; and while the purity of his moral conduct and his conscientious discharge of religious duties rendered him an ornament and example to the nation, it defied the censures of his enemies. Under his mild yet firm administration, the prosperity and dignity of Britain were maintained during a series of unexampled difficulties and dangers, which convulsed the kingdoms, and overturned the thrones, of most of his contemporaries. Nor was his encouragement withheld from any undertaking likely to promote useful discoveries, or improvements in science; so that, in every respect, his long reign may be considered a blessing; and if the soundness of his political views may on some occasions have been called in question, the excellence of his intentions never could.

1820.]

GEORGE IV.

[1830.

215. As PRINCE REGENT, had long exercised the functions of royalty; his accession to the throne was therefore merely nominal, and occasioned no material change. In his speech at the opening of the new parliament, April 27th, he expressed his intention of imitating his father's example, and to endeavour to secure the welfare of all classes of his subjects, by watching over and promoting the

national interest. Disturbances still continued in the country, and a plot to assassinate the ministry was disclosed by one of the conspirators. Thistlewood, who had been concerned in the riots at Spitalfield, and had then escaped conviction, was the ringleader in the conspiracy for the intended massacre. Their place of meeting was a stable in Cato street, and there they were seized with arms in their possession, on the night appointed for the execution of the plot. In the confusion, Thistlewood escaped, but was afterwards taken, brought to trial, and with four others suffered on the 1st May for their treason. A spirit of discontent prevailed at the same time in Scotland, chiefly in the neighbourhood of Glasgow: and deluded by false representations and inflammatory harangues, a small number took up arms at Bonymuir, near Falkirk, in hopes of a general rising. On the approach of the military, some quietly dispersed, and others were taken prisoners. One suffered in Glasgow, and two in Stirling as traitors and promoters of sedition; after which the alarming excitement subsided, and tranquillity was soon restored.

216. Queen Caroline, who had for some years resided on the Continent, returned to England shortly after the accession of the king,—a step which was remonstrated against even by her friends, as such rumours of the impropriety of her conduct while in Italy, had been received as rendered a public trial inevitable. A bill of pains and penalties was accordingly brought before the House of Lords; but as the majority for the third reading of the bill was small, it was resolved to proceed no further. This was, however, by no means considered an acquittal; her name was still omitted in the Liturgy, and she was not only excluded from participating in the honours of the coronation, but was refused permission to witness it. Her partisans were chiefly the opponents of administration, as they made her the instrument of exciting disturbance, and inflaming the public mind. She died at Brandenburgh house, August 7th 1821, after a short illness, and, agree-

ably to her request, her body was conveyed to Brunswick. The interference of the mob to alter the direction in which the funeral procession had been ordered to move, caused a serious riot in the city, and some lives were unfortunately lost.

217. In August 1821, the king visited his Irish subjects: he was the first sovereign of the house of Hanover who had set foot in Ireland, and he received, during his stay in Dublin, the most enthusiastic expressions of loyalty; his dignified, yet gracious demeanour, securing the regard of all who approached him. He received the same gratifying marks of attachment from his Hanoverian subjects, whom he visited in October of the same year.

218. The failure of the potato crop in 1821, reduced the lower classes in Ireland to extreme suffering, which, in the southern counties, led to insurrection and dreadful outrage. Liberal subscriptions were raised in Britain for their relief, and the energy of government suppressed the most formidable part of the disorders; as, though acts of incendiarism and even of murder were still perpetrated, they were neither to the extent, nor on the same organised plan which had excited so much apprehension. Agricultural distress was still felt to a great extent, arising from the high rents at which leases had been taken during the war, and the great reduction in the price of grain. This, it was proposed by the marquis of Londonderry, to relieve by a government loan, as had been done formerly with beneficial results, in a case of commercial difficulty. On this occasion it was, however, thought inexpedient; but an alteration was made in the corn laws. The rate of interest on the national debt was at this time reduced; the bank also made a reduction in their rate of discount. Great part of the tax on salt and leather was taken off, and the tonnage-duty repealed.

219. The inhabitants of Scotland were in 1822 gratified with a sight of their sovereign in the ancient capital of his ancestors, and multitudes thronged from all parts of the kingdom to welcome his arrival, and to witness, in

his entrance to the metropolis, one of the most splendid and imposing scenes ever exhibited in the kingdom. Never were loyalty and satisfaction more cordially pressed : high and low, young and old, eagerly concurred in testifying their attachment to the royal visiter, and harmony which prevailed was undisturbed by the exhibition of any discordant feeling.

220. The marquis of Londonderry having, in a fit of insanity, produced by over-exertion of mind, committed suicide, Mr Canning was appointed secretary for foreign affairs, and Mr Peel succeeded Lord Sidmouth. The duke of Wellington attended, on the part of Britain, the congress held at Vienna, to adjust some differences existing among the European powers ; a treaty was signed called the Holy Alliance, but nothing of importance effected. Britain protested against interference with Spain and made proposals for the total abolition of slavery, both of which France resisted, and in 1823 sent an armament into Spain, under the duke D'Angoulême, whose efforts confirmed Ferdinand in the exercise of absolute power.

221. Britain enjoyed during this year tranquillity and prosperity ; the distress of agriculturists was relieved by the reduction of rents, and great advantages were anticipated from a new system of commercial policy, which, however, were not realised. The state of the revenue permitted a farther reduction of taxes. Measures were adopted by ministry to check the disturbances which prevailed in the south of Ireland ; and a bill was passed recommending compensation for tithes, the payment of which was accounted one of their grievances.

222. The discussions in parliament regarding the condition of the slaves in the British colonies being misunderstood by the negroes, or misrepresented to them ; they imagined that their freedom was unjustly withheld, and a spirit of insubordination soon led to insurrections, which in Demerara, was attended with disastrous consequences, and a strong military force was necessary to protect other islands from similar outrages. The immediate

abolition of slavery being considered inexpedient, various measures for the benefit of the slaves were carried into effect; and, to provide for their religious instruction, a church-establishment was formed, under the superintendence of two bishops. The case of Mr Smith, a missionary in Demerara, who was tried and condemned on an accusation of having excited the negroes to rebellion, produced a strong sensation in this country. Government reversed the sentence, but he died in prison before orders for his liberation had been received. The encroachments of the Burmese on the British dominions in India, caused a declaration of war in 1824. A small force under General Campbell defeated the immense armies of the enemy in their own territories, and in 1826 the emperor agreed to a treaty very advantageous to the Company.

223. The effects of the Revolution still appeared in France in aversion to the Bourbons, which the conciliatory measures of Louis XVIII. had been unable to remove. In 1820 the duke de Berri, younger son of Monsieur, was assassinated; and agitation was kept up by a succession of combinations and conspiracies. Louis died in September 1824, and was succeeded by his brother, the count d'Artois, who became Charles X. The efforts made by the Greeks to obtain emancipation from the Turkish yoke, had for some years excited general interest. Depending on assistance from Russia, they, in 1821, commenced a revolt; and though that assistance was withheld, their own bravery, animated by the hopes of freedom, led them to resist their oppressors: defeat only stimulated them to greater acts of heroism, and in a short time they got possession of nearly the whole of the Morea. They proceeded to establish a government, and to provide the means of defence. British capitalists furnished them with extensive loans; but the jealousies and contentions of their chiefs retarded the settlement of their plans, and were prejudicial to the cause of freedom. The Turks, assisted by the Pacha of Egypt, attempted the recovery of the Morea; and that peninsula became, in

1825 and 1826, the scene of bloody conflicts. The enormities committed by the Turks, called forth the interference of England, Russia, and France in behalf of the oppressed Greeks; and the Grand Signior, refusing to listen to terms, the Turkish squadron was attacked in the bay of Navarino by the Allied fleet, October 20th, 1827. After a conflict of four hours, the Turkish fleet was destroyed, and tranquillity for a time secured to the Greeks.

224. The revival of commerce in Britain and general tranquillity presented, in the commencement of 1825, an appearance of great national prosperity; but the superabundance of capital and low rate of interest, induced a spirit of speculation greatly more extensive and ruinous than that of the disastrous year of the South-sea scheme, 1720. From a mistaken idea of the state of the Spanish colonies in South America, whose independence was now recognised, immense loans were granted to the colonists, the interest of which they were unable to repay; and the expectations of profit from the working of their gold and silver mines were so ridiculously extravagant, that shares bought for £70, were in a few weeks sold for upwards of £1000. Innumerable joint-stock companies were projected at home, which proved, almost without exception, ruinous: foreign markets had also been so much overstocked, that manufacturers were obliged to sell at a loss. The most deplorable consequences ensued: the failure of extensive mercantile and banking houses reduced many from affluence to absolute poverty: want of employment brought distress on the labouring classes; the panic spread throughout the country, and it was not till the end of the following year that public confidence was restored.

225. In 1826, the affairs of Portugal called for the interference of Britain. On the invasion of that country by the French in 1807, the royal family removed to Brazil, and established there the seat of government, by which means the colony rose to greater importance than the mother country. King John returned to Portugal in 1821, leaving his son Don Pedro, viceroy of Brazil; and

soon after his departure, the colonists, excited by the spirit of independence, widely diffused in America, adopted measures which soon produced an entire separation from Portugal. Brazil was declared an independent state, of which Don Pedro was proclaimed emperor: this revolution was effected without much bloodshed, the king of Portugal having no adequate force to oppose it. On the death of John, 1826, Don Pedro resigned the crown of Portugal to his daughter Donna Maria, the new constitution of Brazil not permitting the union of the two crowns. This arrangement was opposed by the queen-dowager, who wished to place her younger son, Don Miguel, on the throne of Portugal, in which she was supported by a strong party. The court of Spain, notwithstanding repeated remonstrances from Great Britain, as the ally of Portugal, continued to give secret assistance to the rebels, who proclaimed Don Miguel king, and overturned the constitution, on which, agreeably to the terms of treaty, a British army was sent to Portugal, and their arrival put a stop to the plans of the disaffected. In 1828, Don Miguel, having professed fidelity to the constitution, assumed the regency in behalf of his niece, but soon after the departure of the British troops, he took possession, without opposition, of the crown, on his own account. Donna Maria was on her way from Brazil, when her attendants, being informed of Miguel's treachery, thought it imprudent to proceed to Portugal, and conveyed her to England, where she was kindly received by the king, and remained till the spring of 1829, when she returned to Brazil. The governor of Madeira having proclaimed his fidelity to Don Pedro, an expedition was sent by Don Miguel, who took possession of the island, August 1828.

226. During the session of 1826, Mr Peel introduced a bill for consolidating the penal statutes, which passed the following year into a law; and he persevered, even when out of office, in simplifying the arrangement of the various acts on criminal law. Disturbance was excited in Lancashire by the unemployed weavers, who assembled in large

bodies, attacked the factories, and destroyed the looms. The evils arising from the repeal of the combination-laws soon extended to Scotland, where willing to work were often prevented by intimidation and forced to join the combinations; and the assistance of the military was sometimes requisite to quell the thus occasioned.

227. The death, January 1827, of the duke of presumptive heir to the crown, who had always supported the protestant principles of the constitution, revived the hopes of the friends to Catholic Emancipation. Their influence had been increased by the elections in Ireland for the new parliament, which took place in November 1826, and was farther strengthened by the removal of the earl of Liverpool, by illness, from the head of the administration. Frequent changes in the ministry took place during the remainder of this year. Mr Canning, who succeeded Lord Liverpool, died in the same year, and was succeeded by Lord Goderich, whose resignation, in the commencement of 1828, was followed by the duke of Wellington being appointed prime minister. A new administration was commissioned to form a new administration, in which Peel and several other members of the Liverpool administration returned to office. A committee was appointed to consider the state of the public finances. The life-annuities act was repealed; and the circulation of small Scotch notes was prohibited in England, in consequence of the English bankers' small notes having previously been suppressed. Alterations were again made in the corn laws, by which the importation of foreign corn was permitted, on payment of duties proportioned to the average price. The repeal of the test and corporation acts, which had excluded dissenters from holding public situations, was followed by an attempt to procure indulgence for Catholics; and this measure, which had been so often discussed, was, for the last time, rejected by the house of Lords. In Ireland the ignorance and excitement by the violence of religious and political

spirit, to acts of outrage and resistance to government ; arms were procured in name of the Catholic Association ; large bodies appeared threatening with vengeance those who differed from them ; and civil war seemed inevitable. This alarming state of the country induced the duke of Wellington and Mr Peel to countenance the measure they had hitherto steadily opposed. The Catholic-Emancipation bill was brought forward, and, having passed both houses, received the royal assent, April, 1829. By this act, Roman Catholics were admitted to a participation of the political rights enjoyed by Protestants, with the exception of being appointed Lord Chancellor, or Lord Lieutenant of Ireland ; they were also precluded from holding offices in the universities, and benefices in the church of England. An act was at the same time passed for suppressing the Catholic Association, and the elective franchise was raised from two to ten pounds. It was hoped that the passing of this bill would have ensured the tranquillity of Ireland ; but unfortunately this has not been the case.

228. Pope Leo XII. died February, 1829, and was succeeded by Cardinal Castiglioni, who assumed the title of Pius VIII. War was declared between Russia and Turkey, in 1828, and numerous engagements took place, which were generally favourable to the Russians. On the acknowledgement of the independence of Greece, its sovereignty was offered to Prince Leopold, who declined accepting it on the terms proposed.

229. The seclusion in which the king spent the latter years of his life, greatly diminished his former popularity. In May, 1830, his debility from illness was so great as to prevent him from signing with his own hand, and a bill was introduced appointing commissioners to affix his sign-manual to public acts. He expired June 26th, having reigned ten years, and, on the same day his brother, the duke of Clarence, was proclaimed by the title of

1830.]

WILLIAM IV.

[1837.

230. THE frank and manly character of the new sovereign, and the amiable qualities of his consort, disposed the nation to regard with satisfaction their accession to the throne. After the transaction of some business before the house, parliament was dissolved July 24th, and a new one summoned, which was opened by the king in person, Nov. 2nd. Towards the end of the year, the duke of Wellington and Sir Robert Peel, intimated the resignation of the ministry; on which earl Grey was commissioned to form a new administration, at the head of which he continued till July 1834, when he was succeeded by lord Melbourne. During this year there was great loss of property, particularly in Kent, by willful fire-raising, and in other counties by the destruction of machinery. A proclamation was issued by the duke of Northumberland, Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, prohibiting the meeting of a society whose avowed purpose was the repeal of the Union.

231. In July 1830, violent commotions prevailed in Paris, in consequence of an attempt made by the king and ministers, to dissolve the Chamber of Deputies, and restrict the liberty of the press. During the conflict, which continued three days, the national guard joined the populace in resisting the regular troops. Charles X. left Paris, and the duke of Orleans was requested to accept the office of Lieutenant-General of the kingdom: soon after which, having agreed to the stipulations required, he was acknowledged king, under the title of Louis Philippe I. Charles, after abdicating the crown in favour of his grandson, the duke of Bourdeaux, arrived in England, and resided in Edinburgh, with various members of the royal family, till September 1832, when they went to the continent.

232. Commotions similar to what occurred in Paris, prevailed about the same time in various parts of the north of Europe. A revolution commenced at Brussels in *August*, and the Dutch troops were repulsed with great

slaughter in attempting to take possession of that city. A provisional government declared the independence of Belgium, and the Prince of Orange was appointed to govern the southern provinces; but this appointment being soon after revoked by the king of the Netherlands, the Belgian troops entered Antwerp, where the prince resided, and the city sustained great damage by the cannonading of the Dutch garrison. In the close of 1830, the grand duke Constantine was compelled, by the insurrection of the Poles, to abandon Warsaw: the throne of Poland was declared vacant, and, in various engagements during 1831, the Poles remained masters of the field. A decree was issued by the Emperor of Russia, confiscating the estates of those who joined in the insurrection; and, after a struggle of nine months, the Poles were forced to yield.

233. The offer of the throne of Belgium having been declined by the duke of Nemours, son of Louis Philippe, Prince Leopold was elected by the Belgic Congress, and having announced his acceptance, he made his entrance into Brussels, July 21st, 1831. The king of Holland immediately resumed war against Belgium, on which Leopold applied for protection to the Allied Powers; and having received assistance from France, the Dutch troops were withdrawn, an armistice agreed to, and the terms of division and separation of Belgium from Holland finally adjusted.

234. On the assembling of parliament, 1831, the Reform-bill was introduced by lord John Russell. It passed the house of Commons, but was thrown out in the Upper house; intelligence of which occasioned riots in some parts of England. In consequence of the prevalence of cholera-morbus in Russia, and its having afterwards extended to Hamburgh, a proclamation was issued respecting the precautions necessary to be adopted. Before the close of the year various cases had occurred in Sunderland, and in a short time it spread over many parts of the kingdom. The 21st Feb. 1832, was ob-

served as a day of general fasting and humiliation, on account of the fearful visitation.

235. On the 8th September 1831, the Coronation of their majesties, king William and queen Adelaide, was performed with great magnificence. A serious riot took place at Bristol, October 29th, on the entrance of the Recorder, Sir Charles Wetherell; who was obnoxious on account of his being an anti-reformer, and particularly for having asserted, in parliament, that a re-action had taken place in Bristol against Reform. The jails, one of them of uncommon strength, were broken open, and burned; the mansion-house, the bishop's palace, the custom-house, an excise office, besides many bonded warehouses and private houses were plundered and set on fire: above 200 perished in the flames, or from the exertions the military were obliged to employ in suppressing the riot, which was not accomplished till the morning of the 31st. Of those taken into custody, four were afterwards executed, and twenty-two sentenced to transportation. On the 28th December the bill for the abolition of hereditary peerage in France passed the chamber of Peers, by a majority of 36.

236. The Reform-bill was again introduced, and the ministry were again defeated in the house of Lords which caused their resignation. They were however recalled in a few days, and the bill having passed the house of Lords, the royal assent was given by commission June 7th, 1832, and was celebrated with public rejoicing. The Irish-Church Reform-bill received the royal assent August 14th, 1833. It was opposed on the ground of being contrary to the obligations of the coronation-oath, of a spoliation of the church, and a step to similar innovations in the church of England, and as having a tendency to weaken the Protestant religion. Capt. Ross arrived in England, 18th August, after an absence of four years, of his Arctic expedition, when all hope of his return had been given up. The slavery abolition-bill passed the house of Lords, August 20th, and the sum of £20,000,000 was

agreed to be given to the planters, as compensation for the loss they thereby sustained.

237. The appointment of Sir Robert Peel as Premier, by advice of the duke of Wellington, on the dissolution of the Melbourne administration, November 1834, produced a great excitement, and many public meetings were held in reference to the change. In consequence of the resolution of parliament, with regard to the Irish tithe question, Sir Robert gave in his resignation, April 1835, when Lord Melbourne and most of his former colleagues returned to office.

238. Portugal had for several years been distracted with civil war, occasioned by the usurpation of Don Miguel, uncle to the queen, and the death of Ferdinand, in 1833, placed Spain in the same situation. The young queen Isabella was opposed by her uncle, Don Carlos, who claimed the right of succession from the Salic law, a renewal of which had been extorted from the late king. A treaty was concluded between England, France, Spain, and Portugal, with the view of terminating civil war in the two latter kingdoms, by expelling Don Carlos and Don Miguel from Portugal, and recruits were permitted to be raised in England, for the service of the queen of Spain, by a suspension of the foreign enlistment-bill. The 1st of August 1834, the period appointed by parliament for the abolition of slavery, and the commencement of the apprenticeship-system, was celebrated with great rejoicings. In several of the islands the result of the measure was highly satisfactory, while in others military coercion was necessary to subdue a spirit of insubordination among the negroes, and their reluctance to work. Both houses of parliament were destroyed by a fire which broke out on the evening of October 16th, and alarm was excited for the safety of Westminster-hall and the abbey: both were, however, happily preserved.

239. In July 1835, Commissioners were appointed by parliament, to inquire into the state of Scotland, with respect to the deficiency of church-accommodation and

pastoral superintendence. Objections were made by a commission of the General Assembly, to the church-commission, as consisting of men whose principles did not entitle them to the confidence of those friendly to the church ; but it was at length agreed to afford every encouragement and assistance to the inquiry. A discussion took place in parliament, regarding the appropriation of the surplus revenues of the church of Ireland, which it was proposed should be applied to the purposes of general education : this proposal was resisted, but a grant of £35,000 was made for establishing schools, and a board appointed for Irish National education. The proceedings of this board have been censured, as having a tendency, from the system of education adopted, to subvert the Protestant religion in Ireland ; and as being made the means of encreasing political agitation. A bill was brought in, July 1836, for the purpose of carrying into effect the recommendation of the commissioners for church-reform, as to the equalisation of the revenues of the different dioceses and the augmentation of the small benefices, in the church of England. Changes were also proposed to be made in the laws relating to Pluralities and Residence. Sir Andrew Agnew's bills for the better observance of the Sabbath were lost ; some of the leading members protesting against legislative interference on the subject.

240. Inquiry was made into the nature and tendency of Orange lodges, and as to their being held in the army contrary to its discipline, and the orders of the commander-in-chief. The conduct of the duke of Cumberland, as grand-master of these associations, was severely animadverted on, and an address presented to the king by the Commons, praying him to deprive of their appointments all officers in the army or navy who were connected with these lodges. On his majesty assenting to the address, the duke announced, that though in submission to the will of the Sovereign, the Orange associations were now to be dissolved, he still adhered to their *principles*: the earl of Winchelsea also expressed his

determination to support these principles, even at the expense of property and life. In 1835, at the commemoration of the revolution of 1830, at Paris, Louis Philippe was fired at with an instrument called the infernal machine, placed in the window of a house in the Boulevard. The king and his sons, who accompanied him, escaped unhurt, but Marshal Mortier was killed, and several officers dangerously wounded. The assassin, named Fieschi, was himself severely wounded, but was seized, and, after a lengthened trial, was, with two of his accomplices, guillotined. Other attempts on the life of Louis have since been made without success.

241. Application having been made to obtain a charter for the London University, government proposed to incorporate the university as a college, and to grant similar charters to such other bodies as might apply for them; and to elect a board to be called *The London University*, which should consist of men of eminence in science and literature, whose duty should be to examine candidates from such colleges, and grant degrees, with the exception of those in divinity. This proposition was, after some discussion among the proprietors, assented to.

242. In June 1837, intelligence of the king's serious indisposition produced general concern and anxiety; for some time after his illness had assumed an alarming appearance, no bulletins were issued, and he continued to give attention to public duties with an anxiety that showed his concern for the interests of the nation. The devoted and unremitting attention of the queen to her royal consort, was such as is rarely exhibited by persons in her exalted station. Day and night she watched by him, endeavouring to assuage his sufferings; and when life had fled, regardless of etiquette and her own weakness, she witnessed the sad ceremonies of his entombment. Beloved in private life, William IV. made no enemies in public; even those differing from him in politics, granted him the praise of upright intentions, and kind and liberal feelings. Truly English in his habits and attachments,

and connected as he had been in early life with a prision which has spread so wide the fame of our country the hearts of Britons warmed towards him, and he turned the attachment by acts of condescension good-will. He died June 23d, 1837, and is succeeded by his niece, the Princess Victoria, daughter of the late of Kent, now

QUEEN VICTORIA;

Whose reign may the Almighty grant to be long prosperous.

THE END.

QUESTIONS.

WILLIAM I. OR WILLIAM THE CONQUERER.

NOTE. The *figures* refer to the *Paragraphs*.

1. What followed the defeat and death of Harold? How did William act after his victory? When and where was he crowned? 2. How did he begin his administration? 3. What means did he use to strengthen the kingdom? What was the origin of the curfew-bell? 4. What was the consequence of William's visit to Normandy? Was the intended massacre prevented? For what purpose was the feudal law introduced? 5. What embittered the latter years of William's life? Where and when did he die? To whom did he bequeath the crown of England? 6. Who was opposed to William Rufus?

WILLIAM RUFUS.

7. What engrossed the attention of all ranks at this time? How was William's death occasioned? What was remarked regarding the place where the accident occurred? What were the principal buildings erected by him? 8. Who took possession of the crown? What did he do to secure it? For what did Robert resign his right to the crown? How was he afterwards treated by Henry? 9. Where was Robert imprisoned? What was the melancholy consequence of Henry usurping his brother's dominions? Where did he die, and who became heiress to his dominions?

STEPHEN.

10. Who was her rival? What ensued on Stephen being proclaimed king? What was the result of the contest? When did Stephen die, and where? 11. Who made inroads on the kingdom during this reign? For what was there a great rage at this period?

HENRY II.

12. Who succeeded Stephen? How did he exert his power? 13. Who disturbed the kingdom by his arrogance, and what was his fate? In what did Henry yield to the prejudices of the times? 14. What was then the state of Ireland? 15. What was the extent of Henry's dominions? What brought on the fever of which he died? 16.

What was abolished in this reign? Who were the first who suffered persecution in England for religious opinions?

RICHARD I.

17. What happened to the Jews at the coronation of Richard I? 18. What did his zeal for the crusades lead him to do? 19. What obliged him to conclude a truce when within sight of Jerusalem? 20. By whom was he arrested on his return? Who endeavoured to prolong his captivity? Where did he die? 21. What was the place of Robin Hood's resort? 22. Who succeeded Richard?

JOHN.

What did John sign at Runnymede? Whom did the barons invite over? 23. What loss did John sustain when contending for his crown? How did it affect him?

HENRY III.

24. Who was Protector during the minority of Henry III.? How was civil war prevented? 25. What was the consequence of Henry violating his promise? 26. What change was made in parliament at this time? 27. Whose valour again brought glory to the English name in the Holy Land? How long did Henry III. reign?

EDWARD I.

28. Where was Edward at the time of his father's death? What plans did he adopt to correct the abuses of the former reign? 29. Of what were the Jews accused at this time? What was done to them? 30. What compelled the Welsh to yield to Edward? What has left a stain on his memory? 31. What did the Scots refer to his decision? Where did he meet the Scottish barons, and how did he decide? What resulted from his march into Scotland? What did he carry away from Scone?

32. In what did he next engage? What excited the murmurs of his subjects? What did their perseverance extort from him? 33. Who roused the Scots to seek deliverance from the English yoke? In what battle did they defeat the English? Did Edward again conquer Scotland? By whom was Wallace betrayed? 34. Who expelled the English, and rescued Scotland from slavery? What was Edward's last injunction to his son? 35. What appellation did his improvements in the laws gain him?

EDWARD II.

36. Did Edward II. observe his father's dying injunctions? In what did he offend the barons? 37. To what did he reluctantly consent? Who raised an army against the king and his favourite?

38. How numerous was the army with which Edward invaded Scotland? Where did Bruce await their approach? How far were the English pursued after their defeat? 39. What did this memorable battle secure to Scotland? How were the Scots received in Ireland?

What obliged Bruce to return? 40. With what had Edward now to contend? What did Lancaster and his party make a pretext for again flying to arms? Did Edward make farther attempts against Scotland? What terminated hostilities with that country? 41. Who was now a formidable enemy to Edward? Whither did he retire when pursued by the queen's army?

42. Where was he confined? What did parliament vote at Westminster? Who was placed on the throne which Edward was forced to resign? By whose orders was he put to death? 43. With what was England afflicted during some years of this reign? What was one of the delusions of the age? How did Philip of France abolish the order of the Knights Templars? What family did Edward leave?

EDWARD III.

44. To whom was Edward III. obliged to submit at the commencement of his reign? For what did Mortimer resign the English claim of superiority over Scotland? How did he enrich himself and family? 45. How was his guilt punished? Where, and how long was the queen imprisoned?

46. To what did Edward apply himself on assuming the reins of government? What means did he employ to regain power in Scotland? In what battle did he obtain a victory over the Scots? What part of Scotland, and which fortresses, were they obliged to resign to him? How was Baliol regarded by the Scots? 47. What was Edward's intention in leading an army to France? When did the first naval engagement between England and France take place, and who were victorious? 48. What great battle was fought on Edward's second invasion of France? Whose valour was conspicuous? 49. For what was the battle remarkable? How did Edward display his prudence? When did Calais surrender, and what was the length of the siege? At whose intercession were the citizens spared?

50. Who had invaded England during Edward's absence? Who collected an army, and where did they meet the Scots? Who was among the prisoners carried to London? 51. What policy did Edward adopt with regard to Calais? For what purpose was the order of the Garter instituted? When did the plague appear in England? How many fell victims to it in London alone? 52. When did Edward again invade France? 53. What recalled him to England? Did Baliol resign his pretensions to the crown of Scotland?

54. Where was the prince of Wales overtaken by the French army? What preparations did he make for battle, and what was the result? 55. How did he conduct himself towards his royal captive? How did Edward receive the French monarch? What other royal prisoner was then in England? 56. When was peace concluded with France? At what was John's ransom fixed? 57. What occasioned his return to England? When did he die? Who succeeded him? 58. Who applied for assistance to the prince of Wales? Had

he reason to regret having given it? What advantage was taken of his situation by Charles?

59. What forced Edward to abandon his attempt to recover the French provinces? 60. What was the character of the prince of Wales? How long did the king survive his death? 61. How is the reign of Edward regarded? How did he introduce the woollen manufacture? By what means were Windsor castle and St Stephen's chapel built? What was abolished at this period? What tribute did Edward resist the payment of?

RICHARD II.

62. Who were appointed guardians of Richard II? What ceremony was observed for the first time at his coronation? 63. What excited the minds of the people at this time? What circumstance led to acts of violence?

64. How did the king show his courage? What effect did his presence of mind produce on the populace? 65. Were the expectations raised by his conduct on this occasion realised? How did he irritate and disgust his subjects? 66. What did the Scots do when Richard entered Scotland by the East? Did he revenge the ravages they made on the West of England? 67. How did Richard excite the jealousy of the nobles? To whom was the sovereign power transferred? Which of the king's friends did queen Anne earnestly entreat the duke of Gloucester to spare? 68. How soon did Richard resume, and how did he use his authority? How long did tranquillity prevail? For what period was the truce with France concluded?

69. For what was Gloucester arrested and sent to Calais? What injustice did Richard show to Hereford on the death of his father the duke of Lancaster? 70. What opportunity did he take to resent it? Did many join him? 71. Where did the king go on being deserted by his army? In what manner was he conducted to London? Who alone objected to the charges drawn up against the king? Who claimed the throne vacant by the deposition of Richard? Where was he conveyed? What was the manner of his death?

72. For what was Wickliffe cited to appear before the bishop of London? What were his proselytes called? Did the bill for the suppression of the Scriptures pass? 73. What did the house of Commons acquire during this reign? What was the number of the king's household? What was introduced in this reign?

HENRY IV.

74. Under what title was the duke of Lancaster crowned? Who was the right heir to the crown? What effect did the contests between the houses of York and Lancaster produce? 75. How were the animosities and resentments of the nobility evinced? Whose rebellion was most dangerous to the king's authority?

76. By whom were the Scots under Douglas defeated at Hamble-

don? What farther enraged Northumberland? What was his purpose in uniting his forces with the enemies of Henry? 77. Who took command of the troops? Where did Henry give him battle? What decided the battle? Were the rebels pardoned? 78. With whom did Northumberland again conspire? Where was he slain? What advantage did Henry obtain over Scotland? What effect had the capture of the young prince on Robert? 79. What amends did Henry make to the prince for detaining him in England? 80. What was the effect of Henry's jealousy of his son? How did the chief justice reprove the prince? What did Henry exclaim when informed of it?

81. Did Henry retain his popularity? What made his usurpation advantageous to the nation? What did he do to gain the favour of the church? What crimes were then not uncommon?

HENRY V.

82. What did Henry V. do on his accession? Who received particular commendation? To whom did he show kindness? 83. Whom did he receive with favour? What made the defects of his title to the crown be forgot? 84. Who was one of the most distinguished of the Lollards? Who condemned him to the flames? Did he escape at that time? For what did he afterwards suffer? 85. What pretext was made for invading France? What city did he besiege and take?

86. For what did he afterwards offer to sacrifice it? What was the situation of Henry at Agincourt? 87. How did he employ the preceding night and the morning of the battle? In what respect was this battle disastrous to the French? What was their loss and that of the English? 88. What were the terms of the treaty of Troyes? Who opposed the treaty, and assumed the title of Regent? To what kingdoms was Henry's infant son regarded as heir? How did he act on feeling his end approaching? What did he at all times evince by his conduct? Whom did his widow marry?

HENRY VI.

89. Who was protector during the infancy of Henry VI.? Of what were the English at this time masters? Who effected the deliverance of the French?

90. What did she promise on being admitted to the king? What effect did the belief of her supernatural influence produce on the English, and what on the French? What did she on entering Orleans promise her followers? When was the siege raised? 91. Did Joan make good her promises? What followed the coronation of Charles? 92. How was Joan afterwards treated? Was her execution advantageous or otherwise to the English? What prevented the English from retrieving their affairs? 93. With whom was a marriage negotiated for Henry? Of what was the duchess of Gloucester accused? On whose destruction did Winchester deter-

mine? Who was the first to establish public libraries in England? For what did Winchester suffer remorse in his last moments?

94. How was the province of Maine alienated from the crown? 95. What was the consequence of Charles' invader's mandy? How long had Guienne been subject to England? What did this war deprive the English? What alone was left the English? What induced the duke of York to aspire to the crown? What title had he to it? What made him a dangerous rival? How Somerset obnoxious to the people? 97. Who excited the rebellion in Kent? Where was the king removed for safety? How to preserve discipline among his followers? What became of the king? 98. What demand was made by the duke of York? Did he use violence to obtain it? What made the birth of a prince come?

99. How did Richard act on being appointed Lieutenant of the kingdom? Which was the first battle between the houses of Lancaster and York? How was the king treated by Richard? How long did the contest of the rival parties continue? 100. For what period was Richard appointed Protector? In what battle was the king again taken prisoner? 101. Where did Margaret leave her infant? Did she receive the assistance she requested from northern barons? What was done by Margaret's orders after the duke of York had fallen in battle? 102. Did young Edward hate his father's moderation? By what title was he proclaimed? With what prospects did Henry VI. begin life? 103. What were the manners of the people at this period? What collected Henry found?

EDWARD IV.

104. What circumstance showed the sanguinary disposition of Edward IV.? 105. Where did Margaret go when defeated at Towton? What offer did she make to obtain assistance in Scotland? What promise did she make to Louis XI. for him to take the field? Relate her adventure in the forest. What became of Henry? 106. How did Edward seek to insure the peace of France? What excited Warwick's indignation, and his conspiracy against Edward? 107. What agreement was made in an attempt to re-establish Henry on the throne? How soon did Warwick become master of the kingdom? Who took Henry from his confinement, and had him again proclaimed? Where did Edward's adherents find refuge? When did Henry again fall into the hands of his enemies? In whose favour was victory at last decided?

108. Where did Margaret and her son land? In what were they taken prisoners? What was the fate of Henry's prince? 109. With whom did Edward league against France? What was the most honourable part of Louis' treaty with Edward? How was the remainder of Margaret's life spent? 110. What was required to procure the death of Clarence? Of what was a

clergyman accused? How did the houses of parliament show their servility? What was the only favour granted to Clarence? 111. Who obliged the Scots to restore Berwick? For what was Edward making preparations when seized with illness? 112. What was prohibited in this reign? What was introduced? By what was England twice visited in this reign?

EDWARD V.

113. Who succeeded Edward IV. What did Gloucester's ambition prompt him to? With whose assistance was he proclaimed?

RICHARD III.

114. What did Richard III. resolve on, to secure his ill-gotten power? Where was a monument erected to the memory of the young princes? 115. Who conspired to transfer the crown to Henry, earl of Richmond? What prevented Buckingham from joining his associates? Who betrayed him? 116. What was Richard's next plan to secure the crown? Where was Richard when Richmond landed? 117. Where did they meet? How did Richard behave in battle? How long had the sceptre been swayed by the line of Plantaganet?

HENRY VII.

118. Where was Henry VII. proclaimed king? 119. What delayed his coronation? On what account did the union of the houses of York and Lancaster give general satisfaction? What made the king unpopular? Who raised an insurrection against him? By what was the nation gratified? 120. What again disturbed Henry's government? Who was suspected to be engaged in the plot? Where, and by what title was the pretended prince proclaimed? 121. Where was the queen dowager placed? What was done to Warwick? Where did Simnel land? Where did the hostile armies meet? In whose favour was the battle decided? What punishment was inflicted on Simon, and Simnel? How did Henry make the punishment of the rebels subservient to his avarice? 122. In what did the counties of Durham and York show their aversion to Henry's government? Who suppressed the insurrection? On what pretence did Henry levy a benevolence? What did the eagerness of the nobility for military glory lead them to do?

123. Did Henry intend to attempt the conquest of France? Were the negotiations for peace soon concluded? How was Henry's ruling passion doubly gratified? Who endeavoured to disturb his government, after his authority seemed established? 124. What other impostor made his appearance in Ireland? What frustrated their hopes of success? Who cordially received Warbeck, and gave him in marriage the daughter of the earl of Huntly? 125. At what did

the Welsh murmur and petition the king against? Where were they when surrounded by the king's troops? What castle had the Scottish king besieged during these commotions in England? Was a truce soon concluded?

126. Did Perkin again attempt his foolish enterprise? Were his followers pardoned? How was his wife treated? How was his attempt to obtain liberty punished? What did Henry's severity to the earl of Warwick occasion? 127. What had Henry the satisfaction of concluding in 1501? What did he compel his son Henry to do? To whom was his daughter Margaret married the same year? What increased the affection of the nation to the queen? What increased with Henry's age? What treasure did he possess at his death? What was his character and his conduct? How did he protect the people? What practice did he prohibit? What instance is there of his severity against this abuse? How much did Oxford pay as a composition for the offence?

128. What laws were enacted prejudicial to commerce? 129. What had till now been the expedient, when a fleet was required? What important discoveries were made in this reign? Who discovered Newfoundland, and other islands? What became fashionable about this time?

HENRY VIII.

130. What made the accession of Henry VIII. give general satisfaction? With what advantages did he begin his reign? When did his marriage with Catherine of Arragon take place? When did he engage in war with France? Did he gain any advantage by the campaign? Was he more successful in the North? Where did the English forces meet the Scots? Who fell in the battle of Flodden? How did Henry show his generosity on this occasion? What did he do to cement the union between France and England?

131. Who was Henry's prime minister and favourite at this time? How did he obtain an ascendancy over the king? What office was supported by him with much splendour? Who were placed in his family for education? How did he encourage literature? 132. Who paid him court with a view of obtaining the friendship of Henry? What was agreed on in ceasing Tournay? What was then common among sovereigns? 133. For what purpose did Francis now redouble his flatteries? Did he succeed? What led many of the nobility to involve themselves in penury?

134. Who visited Henry to solicit his friendship? How did he court Wolsey's favour? How did Henry receive the court paid to his minister? 135. What was the field where Henry and Francis met, called? How was the time of the visit spent? 136. Whom did Henry afterwards visit? How did Charles seek to secure the interest of Wolsey? 137. With whom was Wolsey appointed to negotiate between Charles and Francis? How was he received at *Bruges*? What did he stipulate in concluding an alliance against

France? 138. With what had Europe been some years agitated? Who exposed the errors of the church of Rome? Who readily received the new doctrines? Who wrote against them? What title did the Pope bestow on Henry? Did the number of Luther's followers encrease?

139. Who succeeded Leo? Was Wolsey again disappointed of obtaining the popedom? What powers were conferred on him? How did he endow the colleges he erected? What occasion did he take to display his magnificence? 140. On what pretence did Henry seek to have his marriage annulled? Whom did he design to raise to the throne? What caused Wolsey's disgrace? What did Cromwell's defence of the cardinal acquire for him? What remark did Wolsey make on his death-bed? Of what is his history a striking instance?

141. How did Henry show his disregard of papal authority? How did his resentment favour the Reformation? What encreased his arrogance? Who showed great severity to the favourers of the Reformation? For what offence were some brought into the bishops' court? What was made treason? Did many suffer for it? 142. How did Henry begin to abolish the monastic orders? On what pretence was Tindal's translation of the Scriptures prohibited? Where was a new one printed? What did queen Catherine do, a little before her death? Who was Anne's principal accuser? Who alone of those she had served attempted to soften the king's resentment? Whom did he marry the day after Anne's death? What excited the compassion of the people? What lessened Henry's joy at the birth of his son?

143. Whose opinions did Henry undertake to confute? What was the law of Six Articles termed? What did the denial of the first article incur? With what was denial of the others punishable? Who had the courage to oppose this bill? 144. Who proposed Ann of Cleves to Henry? Who caused the ruin of Cromwell? What was his character? What use did he make of his power? 145. What settlement did Anne receive? How did the Catholics regard Henry's marriage with Catherine Howard? What ensued when Norfolk and Gardiner directed the council? Who was supposed to have instigated a rebellion in Yorkshire? How did the last of the Plantagenets perish?

146. For what did Henry request an interview with James? Who endeavoured to prevent the meeting? What prevented Henry from revenging this affront? Who was executed along with Catherine Howard? How did Henry now show his caprice? What was inculcated in his publications? 147. Who were prohibited from perusing the Scriptures? 148. How far did Henry's army proceed into Scotland, and what made them retreat? At what were James's nobility dissatisfied? How did they act at the appearance of the English? How was James affected on hearing of the defeat? 149. What did Henry project on the death of his nephew? On what

condition were the Scottish nobles liberated? How did Cardinal Beaton excite aversion to the Alliance?

150. When did Henry invade Scotland? What part of the country was laid waste? Who was suspected of correspondence with England? What did Lennox receive from Henry? 151. Whom did Henry appoint regent while he went to Calais? By what was the war with Scotland signalised? What did parliament vote the king? What was agreed in concluding peace with France? 152. What young lady suffered at the stake for denying one of the six articles? How was the queen nearly exposed to a similar fate? 153. Who was at this time the head of the Catholic party? What provoked Henry's jealousy of him? What saved him?

154. How many were executed for thefts and robbery during this reign? To what was this attributed? What contributed afterwards to the regular execution of justice? What college did Henry found, and endow? What bishoprics did he erect?

EDWARD VI.

155. Who was elected Protector on the accession of Edward VI.? Who assisted his efforts to establish the reformed religion? Who obstinately adhered to popery? 156. What was repealed, and what abolished? What did the young king lament with tears? Who suffered death for their religious opinions in this reign? Who persuaded Edward to sign the warrants?

157. What made the Protector invade Scotland? What loss did the Scots sustain near Pinkey? How did Somerset lose the advantage thus gained? Who was left to negotiate with the earl of Arran? 158. With what did these hostilities inspire the Scots? Who seconded the proposal to send the young queen to France? Where did she put to sea? 159. What was beneficial to Scotland during this reign? How did Seymour disturb the protector's administration? How did he suffer for his ambition? 160. What effects were now felt from the suppression of monasteries? Where was the commotion attended with violence? How many of the rebels were killed?

161. How did the Scots take advantage of these commotions? What obliged the English troops to leave Haddington? What did the French attempt the recovery of at this time? 162. Who opposed the Protector's reasons for discontinuing the war? 163. For what was Boulogne surrendered? What was the treaty with Scotland? How was the ruin of Somerset accomplished? 164. How did Northumberland induce Edward to exclude the princesses? By what deed were they set aside? On whom was the crown settled? What did Northumberland hope to obtain by this transaction? 165. Under whose care was the king now put? What made his death be regretted by the nation?

166. How did lady Jane receive the tidings of her elevation? *Where did the sovereign usually reside a few days after accession?*

Where was Jane proclaimed? Who dreaded the accession of Mary? What made the nation dread to break the line of succession? 167. Where was Mary when informed of the king's death? What assurance did she give to the nobility?

MARY.

168. How long did Jane wear the crown? Why was the sentence against her and lord Guilford not put in immediate execution? 169. How did Mary break her promise to maintain the reformed religion? How were the clergy treated? What gave general dissatisfaction to the nation? What was made a pretext for the execution of Jane and her husband? For what was a reprieve of three days granted? 170. How did she behave on the scaffold? With whom were the Tower and prisons filled? 171. Where did Mary meet Philip? Was his behaviour calculated to remove the prejudice against him? 172. Who was the first victim of the persecution that now commenced? On whom did Gardiner devolve the work of persecution? How was Cranmer treated? How many suffered at the stake? What steps were taken to introduce the inquisition? What effect had this violence? What expedients did the queen employ to gratify her husband's demands? 173. Were the English averse to assist Philip in his war with France? In what manner did the queen prepare a fleet and army to join him? What did the duke of Guise attempt? How soon did he succeed? How long had the English possession of Calais? What did the loss of it occasion?

174. What encreased Mary's dejection? What circumstance made her death be regretted?

ELISABETH.

175. What sentiments had the situation and conduct of Elisabeth excited towards her? How did she receive the congratulations of the people? How did she proceed in the re-establishment of Protestantism? What was abolished, and what ordained by parliament? Why did she decline Philip's overtures of marriage? What was agreed to in the negotiations with France? 176. To what did Elisabeth now direct her attention? What was she styled? 177. What at this time made progress in Scotland? How did the reformers show their zeal for the subversion of idolatry? On what condition did the queen-regent grant a toleration of the reformed religion?

178. On whose behalf did Elisabeth interfere? What excited the jealousy of Elisabeth towards Mary? 179. What made Mary's continuance in France disagreeable? What was Elisabeth's conduct when Mary requested a safe passage through England? How did Mary feel on leaving France? How was she received by her subjects? What was asserted from the pulpit? To what may her subsequent errors be in a great measure attributed? 180. What were

the reformers called in France? With whom did Philip enter into an alliance to suppress the Reformation? Who craved the assistance of Elisabeth against this combination? What did the expense thus incurred oblige her to do? 181. What did the Commons entreat of the queen? What proposal did she reject? What compelled to the capitulation of Havre? What added to the calamity?

182. What was now professed by Elisabeth and Mary? With whom did Mary's subjects desire she should form an alliance? How did Elisabeth act on this occasion? 183. What prevented Mary from acquiring popularity? Who assisted the earl of Murray, and other noblemen, in a conspiracy against Mary? 184. What encreased her dislike to Darnley? What was the manner of the king's death? Who was accused of the crime? 185. What did Mary's marriage with Bothwell draw upon her? Where was he defeated, and what became of him? Where was Mary imprisoned? Who assembled an army to oppose her? Where did she go after her defeat at Langside? Did Elisabeth grant her protection? How long was she a captive in England?

186. Which conspiracy in behalf of Mary proved fatal to her? For what was she brought to trial, and condemned? 187. Who made vain efforts to avert the doom? What was Elisabeth anxious to have believed? How did Mary receive intelligence that she must prepare for death? How did she spend her last hours? How did she behold the preparations for her death? What did Elisabeth affect when informed of the event? How was the resentment of James appeased? 188. What excited Philip to invade England? What was shown by all ranks there? What did the queen declare her intention of doing? What did this conduct inspire her subjects with?

189. What was the Spanish fleet styled? Where were they met by the English fleet? What occasioned confusion in the Spanish fleet? What was the effect of every encounter? In what state did the boasted Armada return? For what did the queen go in state to St Paul's? 190. What did the English derive from the attack they made on the Spanish coast? What raised the British navy to the superiority it has since maintained? 191. In what was Elisabeth next engaged? Who commanded the forces sent to the assistance of Henry IV.? With what were the enterprises against Philip attended?

192. What city did Essex successfully attack? For what purpose was a fleet prepared the following year? 193. In what state was Ireland at the close of the sixteenth century? Who encouraged the rebellions there? What expedients were tried to civilise the inhabitants? What character did O'Neale assume? 194. Who was sent with an army to attack the rebels? Did he encounter Tyrone? 195. How did Elisabeth receive Essex? What kept up her displeasure towards him? When was an end put to the war? 196. *What made Essex engage in seditious projects? Who appeared*

against him at his trial? Was Elisabeth reluctant to sign the warrant for his execution? What made her at last consent?

197. Into what state did she from this time sink? What raised the price of commodities, and put a restraint on commerce? How did she grant redress? What attitude did her subjects generally assume in her presence? 198. What circumstance increased her melancholy? How did she treat the countess on her making the declaration? Whom did she name as a successor? 199. How did Elisabeth increase the prosperity of her subjects, and diminish that of her enemies? What did her failings arise from? 200. What was greatly encouraged in this reign? When was the first patent granted to the East India company? Where were colonies settled? What increased so much as to make a proclamation necessary to restrain it? 201. What was at this time held in high estimation? Where did the Spanish king found a seminary for the children of English Catholics? Under whose direction were the priests who were sent over from these seminaries? Were attempts made to assassinate Elisabeth?

FROM THE UNION OF THE CROWNS OF ENGLAND AND SCOTLAND.

JAMES I.

1. What was James's title to the crown? What was done by all ranks on his journey to London? What did his new subjects contrast to his disadvantage? 2. How did he show his sense of their attachment? How was it regarded? For what did James enter into a treaty with the duke of Sully? 3. What conspiracy was discovered in the first year of his reign? How long was Sir Walter Raleigh imprisoned for being engaged in it? 4. How was James employed in 1604? What was the result of the conference held at Hampton-Court? 5. What delayed the assembling of parliament? What did James annul of his own accord? 6. What was zealously urged by the king? Of what had he soon reason to complain?

7. Who had formed great expectations from his accession? Who formed the plan for the destruction of the king and parliament? When did they begin their operations? To how many persons was it known? How long was it kept secret? 8. How was it discovered? Who conjectured that danger was to be apprehended from gunpowder? Who was seized just as he had completed the preparations? Did all the conspirators suffer? 9. In what did James's magnanimity appear? Did this moderation please his subjects? How did the Puritans regard his measures for the support of the established church?

10. What did his prudence and steadiness accomplish in Ireland? With what success did he urge the union with Scotland? What had he the mortification to be refused? What involved him in disputes with parliament? What event diminished the glory of the French monarchy? 11. Against whose appointment did James remonstrate? What occasioned universal regret? How did the alliance of the princess Elisabeth with the Elector prove unfortunate? What gave great offence to James's subjects? 12. What rank did his first favourite attain? What was his crime towards his tried friend? How was the latter part of his life passed? 13. Who was the king's new favourite? What encreased discontent at these proofs of the king's weakness? How was Raleigh's execution regarded?

14. What was unacceptable to the nation? What proposal did Buckingham make to the prince? How was Charles received in Spain? What did Buckingham prevail with the king to do? What made him the favourite of the people? What schemes did he encourage to defray the expenses of the war? 15. With whom was a marriage-treaty concluded for the prince? What made the army sent to assist the Elector unfit for service? How was James affected by the disaster? What exhortations did he give the prince? To what was his pacific disposition conducive? What was prohibited by Elisabeth? How far did James extend the penalty? What effect did the discouraging of the nobility from residing in London produce? Who introduced building with brick?

16. For what was the money raised by the first lottery in England given? Where were settlements made? How did James encourage science? When was the present translation of the Bible made?

CHARLES I.

17. How old was Charles I. when he ascended the throne? What did the house of Commons take into consideration? How did they treat Charles with regard to it? To whose influence was their withholding the necessary supply attributed? 18. How did Charles regard their refusal? What did he consider to be a sacred duty? How did he regard their attempt to abridge his authority? What occasioned parliament to meet at Oxford? Did they grant the supply requested by the king? What did they demand the stricter execution of? Of what did Charles take advantage to dissolve parliament?

19. By what means did he equip a fleet? What obliged him to call a second parliament? On what condition did they vote a supply? What determined Charles again to dissolve parliament? 20. What created violent discontent? What made a farther supply of money necessary? What was another cause of complaint? On what grounds did Charles prepare to attack France? 21. Who proposed the calling of a third parliament? What was declared to be illegal in the Petition of rights? How was the royal assent to it received? What excited the king's indignation? What diminished

his authority in parliament? 22. What was now his determination? How did he attempt to procure relief for the family of the Elector?

23. To what was Charles influenced by Laud? Who were among those detained by government from going to America? What occasioned a tumult in St Giles's, Edinburgh? In what did all ranks unite? What was declared unlawful by the assembly held in Glasgow? 24. How did they prepare to defend the Covenant? What overtures were made by Charles after advancing to Berwick? 25. What occasioned the dissolution of the fourth parliament? Where did Charles conclude a new treaty? What was the first act of the Long Parliament? For what action did Charles feel grief and remorse? What courts did parliament abolish? To whom was the princess Mary betrothed?

26. With what intention did Charles visit Scotland? Of what did he receive information while there? Who were the leaders in the intended insurrection in Dublin? How was it prevented there? Where did the massacre commence? How many were computed to have perished? 27. Did the Scots assist their Protestant brethren in Ireland? What was insinuated by the English parliament? Who were now become too powerful to be intimidated? How were the bishops obliged to absent themselves from parliament? 28. Was the king's demand to deliver up the leaders of the popular party complied with? How was he treated by the common council? With what was the queen threatened? What was the king's answer when parliament desired to have command of the army? Where did Charles remove to? With what intention did parliament encrease the forces? How did the queen procure a supply of arms and ammunition? With what was the nation violently agitated?

29. Where was the royal standard erected? How were the king's revenues employed? What made Charles retire to Shrewsbury? What declaration did he issue from Wellington? 30. Where was the first blood shed in this quarrel? How many fell at Edgehill? What city was most devoted to Charles? For what were preparations again made on both sides? What was the purpose of the solemn League and Covenant? What was done by the assembly met at Westminster? What prelate did they bring to a violent death? When was the Liturgy publicly abolished? 31. On what occasion was Cromwell first brought into notice? What was desired by the Independents? How were the officers engaged during the intervals of action? Where did the Earl of Montrose obtain victories over the Covenanters? What battle decided the fate of Charles? Where had the queen fled from Oxford?

32. How were the overtures made by Charles received? What made him resolve to throw himself on the protection of the Scottish nation? What orders did parliament issue on hearing of his escape? 33. Had he reason to repent of trusting the Scots? On what condition did they agree to give him up to his enemies? How was he conducted to Holdenby? What was his treatment there? What

was refused him? 34. Who opposed the wish of parliament to disband the army? Where was Charles conveyed by Cromwell's orders? How did Charles hope to regain his power? Where was he brought by the victorious army? On what did he resolve? On whose protection did he throw himself? Where was he obliged to accompany Hammond? 35. To what did Cromwell now apply himself? Where was the proposal to bring the king to trial first made? How many members had the courage to oppose it? What were the only demands not acceded to by Charles?

36. Where did Cromwell obtain a victory over the duke of Hamilton? On what agreement did Cromwell give the power into the hands of Argyle? Where was Charles next conveyed? What did Cromwell now show a determination to do? How were those favourable to the king excluded from parliament? What vote was passed by the Commons? Was it rejected by the house of Peers? What did the house of Commons declare on this? 37. Who was sent to conduct the king to London? Where did the court sit for his trial? What answer was given when the name of Fairfax was called? What was exclaimed on the charge being read in the name of the people of England? Who was discovered to have spoken?

38. How often did Charles decline the authority of the court? How was he insulted on being brought for the last time? What remark did he make on a soldier being punished for imploring a blessing on him? 39. On what proof was the king condemned? Who interposed in his behalf? What noblemen offered to suffer for him? Where was he conveyed after sentence was pronounced? How many of his family remained in England? What advice did he give the princess? What did he say to the young duke? How was his remaining time mostly spent?

40. Where was the scaffold erected? How did he survey the preparations? What declaration did he make to those around him? How did he exhort them to restore the peace of the kingdom? Who attended to pay him the last duties? 41. How was the nation affected on hearing of the melancholy event? What glaring instance was there of the hypocrisy of his murderers? What explanation did Juxon give of the last word uttered by Charles? 42. When was Charles executed? What qualities did he possess? What resulted from his smallest error? 43. What increased the sympathy of the people? What was done to the king's statue in the Exchange? On what pretence was the house of Lords and monarchy abolished? What was made treason? How were public acts to run?

COMMONWEALTH.

44. What was now the great support of the Republican party? How did Cromwell pursue his ambitious designs? What policy did he adopt in Ireland? What appointment did he receive on his return to London? 45. On what terms was Charles invited to Scotland? What was required of him before landing? Where did

Cromwell obtain a victory over the Scots? Where was Charles crowned? How did Cromwell again attack the Scottish army? To what did Charles persuade his generals? Where was he overtaken and defeated by Cromwell? How long did he wander in disguise? 46. How were Scotland and Ireland now treated? Who took Limerick? What regard was shown for Ireton's services? Where did Monk obtain the records of Scotland? Who submitted to the Commonwealth? What served to reconcile the Scots to subjection?

47. What were made the grounds for declaring war against Holland? What made the Dutch sue for peace? What event decided the battle of July 29th in favour of the English? 48. What made Cromwell come to the resolution of dissolving parliament? How did he accomplish his object? Did his usurpation excite indignation? 49. Of whom did the parliament summoned by Cromwell chiefly consist? What did they take into consideration? How did they restore their authority? What was then proposed in council? For what did Cromwell profess to accept the office of Protector? How long was he to retain it? How did he choose his council?

50. To what did the Dutch agree on Cromwell's signing peace? Of how many members did the new parliament consist? What occasioned its dissolution? Where was the king proclaimed in 1655? How were the Royalists punished? 51. Who cultivated the favour of the Protector? To what state was the queen of England reduced in Paris? How did Cromwell meet the advances of the court of Spain? What importance was attached to the acquisition of Jamaica? Where was the squadron under Blake sent? 52. When did the Spaniards declare war against England? What was the last action in which Blake engaged? How did Cromwell assist the French army? What was by agreement delivered to him? How was his son-in-law received at the French court?

53. What obliged Cromwell to decline the offer of the crown? What induced him to dissolve the parliament? What prevented him from deriving satisfaction from his successes? What did he now find a load to him? What increased his distress? How did his anxiety and horror of mind affect him? What was there extraordinary in his character? 54. What was the character of his son who succeeded him? How did he act on finding a strong party against him? What brought about a reconciliation between the Royalists and Presbyterians? Who prepared the way for the peaceful restoration of Charles?

55. Did parliament comply with the desire of Monk? What reply did he make on receiving thanks for his services? What was the settlement of the Commonwealth understood to imply? What party did the elections for the new parliament favour? What advice did Monk send to Charles? How was the letter and declaration of Charles received? Who were sent to invite him to take possession of the throne?

CHARLES II.

56. What had Monk accomplished in a few months? What of Charles' conduct gave great satisfaction? What interrupted rejoicings of the court? What was the purpose of the queen-mot visit to the king? 57. What title was conferred on Monk? What was very favourable to the nation? Why was the army disbanded? What was done to the towns which had resisted the king? What became of the forts erected by Cromwell? 58. What made Charles resolve to establish Prelacy in Scotland? With what were the steps towards this object stained? What was declared unlawful? What did the act of uniformity require? How were the principles of toleration broken?

59. What was the portion of Catherine of Portugal? What remarked respecting Vane's death? 60. How many of the clergy relinquished their livings? What did the king express on issuing a Declaration of Indulgence? Why did parliament remove against this Declaration? How was countenance given to Jesuits and Romish priests? What action was condemned by the parties? 61. What produced a rupture with France and Denmark? How many were cut off in London at this time by the plague? What increased the pestilence?

62. What did the king do to gratify parliament which gave occasion for just complaint? How were the non-conforming clergy deprived of their influence, and means of support? 63. Where did the English triumph over the Dutch? How did the calamity of the plague prove beneficial to London and the kingdom? At what times was the inscription ascribing the fire to the Catholics erased? 64. Where were the English thrown into consternation? Where was the Irish fleet repulsed? What was the only advantage derived from the Treaty of Ryswick? How did Clarendon employ himself on retiring to France? 65. What was the greatest tyranny exercised in Scotland? To whom did many of the clergy refuse obedience? What did the submission of the people procure for them? When did Charles give orders to suspend the proceedings of the military?

66. Did this lenity remedy the evil? What did the people do at Lanark, and what did they desire? Where did Dalziel attack them? How might the prisoners have saved their lives? What delayed the delivery of the king's letter ordering their liberation? 67. Whose vigilance defeated an insurrection in Ireland? What brought great distress on the Irish? How was Charles involved in difficulties? What increased the fears and displeasure of the people? What expedient did Clifford propose to supply the king with money? What was the consequence of this breach of public faith?

68. What had Holland now to contend with? On whom did the Dutch vent their rage for their losses? Under whom did the English public now unite? 69. What did parliament require of the king?

and express disapprobation of? What doctrines were those who held public offices obliged to abjure? How was peace proclaimed in London? 70. How did Charles seek to appease the murmurs of the people? What revived former jealousies against him? 71. Who was now prime minister in Scotland? Whose case showed the treachery as well as tyranny of his administration? What had rendered Archbishop Sharpe odious to the Covenanters? Where were many of their ministers then confined? What was done on pretence that the western counties were in a state of rebellion? How long was this outrage permitted?

72. What bond were the gentry and farmers required to sign? What was done that complaints might not reach the throne? What was made a pretext for encreased severity against the Covenanters? What determined them to seek redress by their valour? Where did Monmouth defeat them? Whose power still prevailed against them? 73. Who gave evidence of pretended Popish plots? What did the duke of York protest in entreating exemption from the Test? What bill was brought in by the new parliament? For what was the country indebted to this parliament? 74. In what did the credulity of the nation again appear? What party-names came into use at this time? Whose blood was shed after an interval of two years, on account of the Popish plot? Where did Charles call another parliament? Why did he dissolve them? 75. What treatment did the Covenanters experience from the duke of York? What declaration did they publish? What was done to those who refused to abjure it?

76. Who combined to raise an insurrection in 1683? What different objects had they in view? What other plot was discovered? What efforts were made to save lord Russel? Who else suffered in the same cause? To whose influence were these severities ascribed? To whom did Charles marry his other niece? 77. In what year of his age and reign did he die? Of what has he been accused? What rendered his government dangerous to his people, and dishonourable to himself? For what reasons was his death regretted?

JAMES II.

78. What did James profess on his accession? What did his first actions show? What did he early display? What revenue did parliament vote him? 79. Who urged Monmouth in his imprudent enterprise? With how many followers did he land? What made him sink into despondency? Where was he discovered after the defeat at Bridgewater? By what was he followed to the scaffold? 80. How were his followers treated? Who were among the innocent victims? How much did a gentleman pay Jefferies to procure liberty? How did James share in the obloquy of these proceedings?

81. How did he endeavour to establish Popery? What incident revived horror against it? How many of the persecuted Protestants

took refuge in England? What were the Jesuits permitted to do? Who were invested with the whole authority in Scotland and Ireland? 82. What did James next attempt? For what reason did he expel the president and fellows of Magdalen college? For what offence were the Primate and bishops committed to the Tower? How did James show his rage at their acquittal? 83. What event proved the cause of James's downfall? Whom did the people invite to their assistance? Who warned James of his danger? What led to mutiny in the fleet? How was discontent in the army exhibited?

84. How did James act when assured of the intended invasion? Did his concessions serve his cause? How was the declaration of the prince of Orange received? Where did he land with his army? What prevented the people from joining him at first? How did the general detestation of the king's measures appear? What instances of ingratitude shocked James? What was his exclamation when informed of the conduct of the princess Anne? 85. How did the populace act on discovering the flight of the king? What made the approach of the prince to London be more welcomed? How was the king received on his return to London?

86. Who wished to induce him to leave the kingdom? What message was sent him by the prince? Where was he kindly received by Louis? 87. With what character did James ascend the throne? What rendered the excellencies of his character pernicious to his country? 88. How was the prince advised to take possession of the crown? Did he object to act on imperfect authority? Who offered to the prince the administration of the kingdom? 89. What was voted by a majority of the Commons? Did it pass in the Upper house? How did the prince express himself? Who seconded his views? What was annexed to the settlement of the kingdom? In whose name was the offer of the crown made?

WILLIAM III.

90. How did William begin his reign? How was the Convention changed into a parliament? What was the party averse to William's government called? What was he empowered to dispense with? 91. What was he anxious to procure? At whose disposal had the whole revenue hitherto been? What was now resolved with respect to it? 92. Who declared for William in Scotland? Who maintained the castle for James? When was the duke of Gordon compelled to surrender? On whom did the hopes of James's adherents now centre? Where did Dundee obtain a victory over the king's troops? How was the victory dearly purchased?

93. Where was James's authority still acknowledged? How did he enter Dublin? What siege was memorable from the brave resistance of the Protestants? What cruelty was practised to induce them to submit? How was the garrison relieved? What loss did this siege cost James's army? 94. How long had James been in *Ireland* before assistance was sent to the Protestants? Who com-

manded the army sent? Of what town did they take possession? 95. What made William's popularity decline? What did he resolve to do? What prevailed in the Scottish parliament? Who were now declared the only orthodox part of the church? Of what did the king inform the new parliament, and desire them to do?

96. When did he embark for Ireland? When did James join his forces? Where was the battle fought? Who led on the Protestant troops? Where did James go on perceiving the battle likely to be decided against him? How many Irish fell? Who was among the Protestants slain? To whom was pardon offered by William? Who was sent to attack Cork and Kinsale? How did the queen act while regent? 97. Who undertook to bring the Scottish clans to submission? Who opposed the plan? On what condition was indemnity offered to those who had been in arms against William? What prevented Macdonald from giving in his submission within the time prescribed? At whose suggestion was the warrant for his destruction signed? Under what pretence were the soldiers marched to Glencoe? How many of the males escaped? What effect did this cruel massacre produce on the Jacobites?

98. With what view did Louis resolve to invade England during William's absence in Holland? Where was he defeated? Of what was William accused? Of what did the English complain? What had been William's motive in accepting the crown? 99. What had a pernicious influence on the morals of the people at this time? Where did William spend his seasons of relaxation? What event greatly affected him? What was the character of queen Mary? 100. What advantage did England obtain by the war with France? What desire of William was opposed? What address was presented to the king? Who formed the plan of propagating the gospel by sending missionaries to foreign countries?

101. Who opposed the settlement of the Scottish company on the coast of Darien? Did the king vindicate their privileges? Who were engaged in the enterprise? What occasioned disputes regarding the succession? What suggested the precautions of parliament in settling the conditions of government? Who was declared next in succession to the princess Anne? 102. How had king James spent his latter years? Who acknowledged his son as king of England? What was this considered a violation of? Who induced the people to desire a renewal of the war with France? What was the accident that proved fatal to William? What was his ruling passion?

ANNE.

103. How did Anne receive the congratulations of her subjects? Who joined the English in the war with France? Who was appointed to the command of the allied army? Where did he gain splendid victories? What did he receive for his services? What saved France at this time? Who opposed Marlborough? 104.

When was the union of Scotland with England completed? How were the terms received in Scotland? What excited the murmurs of the nobility, and the indignation of all? What was stipulated in the treaty for the Union? What kindled anew the animosities of the Scotch in 1708? What attempt was made at this time by the prince of Wales? What prevented his landing?

105. What was the cause of contention in Spain? By whom was Gibraltar taken? What was debated on receiving the news of the conquest? What was the character of prince George of Denmark?

106. What was the success of Marlborough's campaign in 1711? What caused the decline of his popularity and his dismissal? Who succeeded the Whig ministers? To what did Louis oblige himself by the treaty of Utrecht? What article of the treaty was honourable to the English? 107. What did the queen exhort parliament to do? For what event was a public thanksgiving appointed? 108. Whose trial produced great excitement, and was considered the first triumph of the Tories.

109. At what were the Presbyterians in Scotland highly offended? What was the intention of obliging them to take the oath of abjuration? What was another cause of discontent? 110. What embittered the remainder of the queen's life? Who endeavoured to turn these dissensions to their own advantage? What was offered for the apprehension of the Pretender? What was declared to be high treason? To whom was intimation of the queen's situation sent? For what purpose were heralds kept in waiting? 111. For what were the virtues and talents of Anne best fitted? To what was she zealously attached? What may be said of this last sovereign of the house of Stuart?

GEORGE I.

112. Who was George I. How were the Tories excluded from royal favour? Into what were the party-names changed? What act was passed at the meeting of parliament? 113. What was the earl of Mar prompted by revenge to do? Where did the chieftains first assemble? What circumstance was regarded ominous of evil on raising James's standard? How were the clans raised on this occasion? 114. What was attempted by the Jacobites without success? What was the tendency of the Clan-act? At what places was James proclaimed? Where did Mar establish his head-quarters? Where did Argyle give him battle? 115. Who had all the advantages of victory? Who furnished Argyle with intelligence of the insurrection? How were the numbers of the rebels reduced? What was a great blow to their interests? By whose vigilance were the plans of the Jacobites in England and France constantly defeated? 116. Who was forced to surrender at Preston? What deterred many of the Highlanders from entering England? How were the officers treated? With how many attendants did the Pre-

tender arrive in Scotland? Where did he make a public entry? On what anniversary did he embark from Montrose?

117. What noblemen were brought to the scaffold after the rebellion was over? What did this severity excite? Why was the Triennial act repealed? 118. Who was appointed guardian of the kingdom while the king visited his German dominions? What alliance excited murmurs? Why was the nation displeased with the Quadruple alliance? What misfortune inclined Philip to sign this alliance? 119. How long had government been in the practice of borrowing money to defray public expenses? In what speculation did the public eagerly engage? What was the consequence of the rage for stock-jobbing? How long did the delusion continue? Who were found to be involved in these transactions, and dismissed? 120. What observations were made on opposing the grant of supplies? What precautions were used against contagion? Of what was the lord Chancellor accused? Where did Philip of Spain retire to, on resigning his crown?

121. What complaints were now made from Scotland? How did Marshal Wade accomplish the difficult task of enforcing the laws, and protecting the people? What was one of his most beneficial undertakings? 122. What tax occasioned riots in Glasgow? How was quiet restored? 123. With what country was war again commenced? When did the king again resolve to visit Hanover? What occurred on his journey? What was the character of George I. on ascending the throne? How was he misled? What family did he leave?

GEORGE II.

124. Under what disadvantage did George II. labour? In what was the kingdom involved? What had almost extinguished public spirit? What was now the amount of the national debt? Who was at the head of the Court-party? 125. What complaints had been made by merchants? What did the Indian chiefs acknowledge in name of their people? What absurd opinion was entertained in England at this time? What crime had become common? 126. Was depravity confined to the lower ranks? With what intention was the Charitable Corporation instituted? What was discovered with regard to the embezzlement of the capital? For what crimes were several members of parliament expelled? What was asserted at this time respecting the forfeited estates?

127. What scheme of Walpole's excited a great ferment? What party were always out-voted? 128. When was war renewed with Spain? Who was sent against the Spaniards? What was their success? What made Sir Robert Walpole resign office? What occasioned great distress in the winter of 1740? 129. What inducement had Britain to engage in a war in the Continent? What led to violent debates in parliament? Where was the British army surrounded by the French? How were the English saved? What was now projected by the French? Who commanded the army opposed to the allies?

How many fell in the battle of Fontenoy? Where did the young Pretender land in his last attempt to recover the crown? What reward was offered for his apprehension?

130. What was promised in the manifesto read at the cross of Edinburgh? Where were the king's troops put to flight? How did Charles conduct himself on his return to Edinburgh? How much of Scotland now owned his authority? Were his followers willing to accompany him into England? What means were used by government to oppose him? Who brought over about 10,000 to the king's service? 131. What was the amount of Charles' army on leaving Scotland? What city surrendered to them? How did Charles lead the way? In what town was there some appearance of good-will to his cause? How far did they advance into England? What made Charles still confident of success? What prevented his friends from declaring in his favour? When was he forced to commence a retreat?

132. To whom did the garrison left at Carlisle surrender? What was the behaviour of the Highlanders? How did Charles show his dejection? What was the last triumph of the rebels? 133. How did they lose a favourable opportunity of attacking the royal troops? What was another cause of defeat? In what state were they on receiving notice of the duke's approach? What soon decided the fate of the house of Stuart? 134. Between whose adventures, and those of the young Pretender, was there a striking coincidence? How long was he protected by outlaws? By whose intrepidity was he rescued when escape seemed impossible? How was the concealment of him honourable to the highland character?

135. How did the duke stain his victory? What was the effect of the execution of his orders? Who lost favour by expostulating against his severities? 136. What prohibitions were enforced to subdue the martial spirit of the Highlanders? What regulations proved still more beneficial? 137. What terminated the war with France? Who especially regretted the death of the prince of Wales? What caused a renewal of the war with France? What advantage was gained by it? 138. Where else were the British arms victorious? Who plundered Calcutta and attacked the fort? Relate the sufferings of the prisoners in the Black Hole. Of what did the English in a short time gain possession? What put an end to the power of the French in India? Where was the power of Britain acknowledged?

139. What island, belonging to the English, was besieged by the French? Of what was Admiral Byng accused, and brought to trial? 140. For what purpose was the treaty made with Frederick king of Prussia? To whose forces was the duke of Cumberland obliged to yield? Who sent a body of troops to defend Hanover? Where did they defeat the French? Where did the king expire? 141. In what respect did George II. resemble his predecessor? Why was his *death lamented as a national misfortune?* What had enabled the

people to supply encreasing national expenses? What was introduced in 1752? To what was great regard paid at this period? For what purpose was the Royal Society instituted? How was Lisbon destroyed?

GEORGE III.

142. What was the condition of Britain at the accession of George III.? What confirmed all prepossessions in his favour? What else gave universal satisfaction? Who succeeded Mr Pitt in the administration? How was the commerce of Spain almost ruined? Of what had the nation become tired? 143. In what state were the British colonies in America at this time? What country encouraged this jealousy? What opportunity did they take to assert their independence? From which division did the opposition chiefly proceed? Who was sent to petition against the imposition of the Stamp-duty? What renewed the ferment in 1770? Against what proposal did Fox make his first appearance in the opposition?

144. What desire did the Congress met at Philadelphia express? What did they exhort the people to the following year? What was the signal for general insurrection? Who was placed at the head of the provincial army? What frustrated the design of the war, notwithstanding the success of the English? In what condition were they when they published their declaration of independence? What raised the hopes of the Americans? 145. Who was carried from a sick-bed to oppose the acknowledgement of the independence of America? How were hostilities terminated? Why did lord North resign? What islands did the French take? How long was Gibraltar besieged by the Spaniards? In what islands was a dreadful hurricane experienced? What relief did parliament grant the survivors?

146. Where had the contest with America excited deep interest? What proposal threatened serious disturbance in the capital of Scotland? Who put himself at the head of an association to obtain a repeal of the act? 147. What was the mob with difficulty prevented from doing? What did they attack the Sunday following? What prison was set on fire? What appearance did the metropolis present? 148. On what plea was lord George acquitted? To whose negligence was much of the late excesses attributed? Who authorised the military to act? Why was this afterwards censured? What bill was passed in consequence of the petitions which caused the riots?

149. For what purpose was the sovereignty of the Isle of Man purchased? What became the seat of British government in India? Whose impeachment excited strong interest? Who defeated Hyder Ali? Who succeeded Hyder? 150. Against what powers had Britain for several years successfully contended? Who censured the terms of the treaty for general peace? What was the designation of the new ministry? Who was appointed on their dismissal?

How did the former ministers treat their successors? 151. What was called the Commutation-act? What popular bill received royal assent? By what means did Pitt propose to reduce National debt? Who made an attempt on the king's life? 152. What sum was granted for payment of the prince of Wales' debts? What were the first attempts to check the African slave-trade? Where were convicts first sent to Botany Bay?

153. What led to violent discussions in parliament? For what event was a public thanksgiving appointed? 154. When did the French Revolution commence? What had produced a change in the sentiments of the nation? How did the assistance given to the American colonies accelerate the Revolution? In what did the Revolution yield to the wishes of the people? How had the assembly of the states forfeited public confidence? 155. What excited the tumult of the populace? What was a prelude to more dreadful outrages? What circumstance instigated to farther violence? 156. Who commanded the national troops in dispersing the mob at Versailles? In what manner was Louis conducted to his capital?

157. What intention was avowed by the duke of Brunswick entering France? How did this declaration hasten the destruction of Louis? Where were the king and his family confined? Who was among the victims murdered in the prisons? How did the rage for equality appear? Why was the combined army ordered to retreat? What battle decided the conquest of the Austrian Netherlands? 158. What was now felt by the Revolutionists? How did Louis refute the charges brought against him? How great a majority pronounced his condemnation? What had hitherto been the conduct of Britain towards France? 159. Who condemned the French Revolution in parliament? What contributed to the formation of revolutionary societies in Britain? Where did riots occur in celebrating the anniversary of the French revolution?

160. What made the passing of the alien bill necessary? How was the bill passed in hopes of putting a stop to the slave traffic? What were the terms to which Tippoo Saib was obliged to submit? With what view was the embassy of lord Macartney projected? What purpose was an armament sent against the Spaniards? When did France declare war with Britain and Holland? Who commanded the troops sent to Holland? What induced the king to reject the protection of the British troops? Where did the king of Orange and his family find an asylum? What success attended the British fleet? On what account was Mr Grey's motion for reform opposed?

163. Of what were Mr Muir and Mr Palmer accused, and found guilty? What was the meeting held in Edinburgh by their followers in 1795 called? To what were some of the members sent? Who were brought to trial in England on similar charges? To what was the scarcity ascribed? What did the outrage at

to the king occasion? What was represented as infringing on the rights of the people? 165. Against what had the French republic now to contend? What desolated the country? What was publicly abjured? What persons of high rank perished on the scaffold? 166. When was the income of the prince of Wales encreased? What tended to promote the interests both of England and America? 167. On what terms did Prussia make peace with France? What Dutch settlements did the British fleet take possession of?

168. To whom was the army for the invasion of Italy entrusted? What was the king of Sardinia compelled to do? Who alone resisted? What was he afterwards obliged to yield to obtain peace? What induced the Corsicans to revolt? 169. Whose ambassador was ordered to leave France? In what part of Ireland did the French fleet intend to land? 170. What was the aspect of affairs in the commencement of 1797? What greatly encreased public alarm? How was the embarrassment in the public funds relieved? 171. What accounts spread still greater consternation? How was discontent at their grievances aggravated? What influenced them to return to their duty? Where did a more serious mutiny break out? What had they the audacity to attempt? Who was the ringleader?

172. Where, and for what purpose was it intended to effect a junction of the French, Spanish, and Dutch fleets? Who successfully encountered the Spanish fleet? Who was equally successful against the Dutch at Camperdown? What caused tumults in Scotland at this time? 173. What had been the effect of the repeal of the penal laws against Catholics? With what design was the society of the United Irishmen instituted? Who instituted a counter society? What precautions were used on discovering the extent of the danger? Of what were the Irish guilty in preparing for war? 174. How were their plans frustrated? Where was the principal station of the rebels? How did the French attempt to revive the rebellion? What did Pitt use his utmost endeavours to accomplish?

175. What greatly extended the power and territories of Britain in India? What was the success of the British fleet this year? 176. How was a spirit of patriotism exhibited? How was the supply for continuing the war raised? On what expedition did Bonaparte set out in May 1798? What island did he take in the Mediterranean? At what battle did he defeat the Mameluke army? 177. Where did Nelson discover the French fleet? What victory produced surprising effects in Europe? What was now considered as not hopeless? How did Bonaparte attempt to secure his conquests in Egypt? What did he declare to be his intention? Where did he proceed on leaving Cairo?

178. By what was Acre celebrated during the Crusades? Who animated the garrison to repulse the enemy? How long was the siege continued? What was done by the French soldiers on their

retreat? What was published by Bonaparte on his return to Cairo? How did he in some measure retrieve his late disgrace? When did he return to Paris? 179. How was he welcomed in France? How did he contrive to secure to himself supreme authority? What efforts were made to secure the different factions? What overtures were made by Bonaparte to the king of Great Britain? On what account were they rejected? 180. What called forth reflections on government? What was proved respecting the Dutch expedition? What bill was passed in consequence of the scarcity that prevailed? Where was another attempt made on the king's life? By what was this year distinguished? When did the union commence? How was Ireland to be represented in parliament?

181. How much of Italy had been recovered by the allies? What did Bonaparte accomplish at the head of his army? What victory undid all that had been accomplished in the former campaign? Which battle compelled the Austrians to accept of a disadvantageous peace? What expeditions were undertaken by the British navy this year? 182. What occasioned distress among the lower classes? What kingdoms joined alliance with Russia against Britain? What measures were taken to repel the confederacy? What effect had the death of the emperor Paul? What desire was expressed by Alexander, his son and successor? 183. What caused the resignation of Mr Pitt? What was brought on by the anxiety of the king's mind? Whom did he appoint on his recovery to be prime minister? What act did lord Moira procure?

184. Under whom was a fleet dispatched to expel the French from Egypt? What dangers did they encounter in landing? What was the result of the engagements that took place? Whose loss had the British to lament? 185. What increased rejoicings for the victories in Egypt? What was proved by the extraordinary efforts made by Britain during this war? How much had been paid in subsidies to foreign powers? 186. How did Bonaparte's conduct rouse the indignation of the British? Who made great sacrifices for the protection of the kingdom? How did Bonaparte violate the laws of nations? 187. Who suffered death for a plot to assassinate the king, and overturn government? Who were defeated in India by Sir Arthur Wellesley?

188. To what did Bonaparte's ambition now prompt him? By whom was his title of Emperor recognised? What did he profess in addressing another letter to the king of England? When did Mr Pitt resume his former situation? Where did lord Nelson expire in the moment of his triumph over the French and Spanish fleets? What triumph of Bonaparte's placed Austria at his disposal? Which battle placed Prussia in the same situation? Where was his decree issued prohibiting commercial intercourse with Britain? What treaty procured a cessation of hostilities? 189. What did the talents, and integrity of Mr Pitt obtain for him? Who succeeded him in taking a lead in the cabinet? What led to a correspondence with Talleyrand? What

occasioned the dismissal of the ministry? What expeditions projected by them were unsuccessful? What provoked hostilities from Denmark?

190. Where was the attention of Bonaparte now turned? Under whose escort did the royal family of Portugal sail for Rio de Janeiro? On whom did Napoleon bestow the crown he had forced the king and prince of Spain to abdicate? To whom did Joseph resign for it the crown of Naples? What kingdoms had already been conferred on his brothers Louis and Jerome? What assistance did the Spanish patriots request and obtain? How were the advantages of the victory at Vimiera lost? What had Sir John Moore to encounter in his retreat from Salamanca? Who was defeated at Corunna? Where did the British army remain for the rest of the year? 191. What proved again disastrous to Austria? What was one article of the treaty to which the battle of Wagram compelled the emperor of Austria to submit? How did Napoleon now rule? Where were his decrees for injuring the trade of Britain strictly executed? What caused the annexation of the United Provinces to France?

192. What gave rise to violent debates in parliament? For espousing whose cause was Sir Francis Burdett sent to the Tower? What was granted to the Church of Scotland this session? Of what was the duke of York accused in 1809? On what occasion was a jubilee celebrated throughout the kingdom? What brought on a relapse of the king's disorder? Who was appointed Regent of the kingdom? 193. With what success was the Peninsular war continued? What title was conferred by the Spanish Cortes on Wellington? What battle obliged the French to evacuate the South of Spain? What was favourable to the cause of the Spanish patriots? What concluded the campaign?

194. What produced war with America in 1812. What retrieved the honour of the British flag? 195. Who was shot when entering the house of Commons? On what terms was the East India charter renewed? 196. What caused the declaration of war between France and Russia? What was remarkable of the French army prepared for this campaign? What was the plan adopted by the Russians? By whom were the French harassed in their pursuit? Where was a sanguinary combat fought? How was the patriotism of the Russians exhibited? What rendered the situation of Napoleon critical? What sort of retreat were they compelled to make? How did Napoleon treat his army? What was the effect of this great discomfiture? Who joined the emperor Alexander?

197. How did Napoleon set about repairing his losses? By what had Lutzen been distinguished two centuries before? What was the result of the engagement at Bautzen? Through whom did Napoleon propose a cessation of hostilities? Who joined the allies on the renewal of hostilities? Who fell in the attack of Dresden? What battle decided the fate of Europe? Who were taken prisoners

by the allies? Of what was Napoleon again accused on this occasion? 198. What changes followed the defeat of Napoleon? What had Napoleon still influence to obtain? To whose care did he commit the empress and his son? On what anniversary did he join his army?

199. Who attended the Congress at Chatillon? What gave the allies an opportunity of marching to Paris? How was their entrance hailed? What resolution did the allies declare? Of what was Napoleon informed when hastening to Paris? What did he do on his abdication in favour of his son being rejected? What was he allowed to retain? 200. Where did Louis make his first appearance on assuming the royal dignity? What did the terms of treaty signed at Paris show? What distinguished characters visited England at this time? For what was a day of general thanksgiving appointed? What centenary was celebrated with great splendour? How were the services of Wellington rewarded? 201. What soon disturbed the enjoyment of peace? How did the troops sent to oppose Napoleon act? Where did Louis retire to? How was Napoleon again hailed? How was he designated in the declaration published at Vienna?

202. In what did Napoleon now find himself involved? When did he for the last time leave Paris to join his army? Which was the only kingdom he had been unable to vanquish? What sum was given on this occasion in subsidies to the Allied Powers? When did Napoleon advance against Blucher? How did the Prussians retreat? Where was an attack made by Marshal Ney at the same time? How was the 17th June spent? 203. What was the commencement of the battle of Waterloo? How was the conflict maintained on both sides? For what did the enemy make great efforts? What retarded the approach of the Prussians? What was done by Napoleon as a last effort? Who was wounded in resisting Napoleon's attack? 204. What relieved Wellington's anxiety? What was vainly attempted by Napoleon? To whom did the British army resign the pursuit? How did Napoleon effect his escape? What was found among his baggage?

205. What did his return to Paris occasion? For what did the French ministers show most concern? What was Napoleon again obliged to sign? In what condition did he reach the coast? To whom did he surrender himself? Whose protection did he claim? What was resolved regarding him? How had he used the great power he possessed? 206. Who invested Paris? What capitulation saved it? What was the situation of Louis when again restored to his throne? 207. What was France bound to by the new treaty? What indemnity was to be paid to the allies? What were the terms of the treaty of alliance entered into? 208. What evils were felt before experiencing the advantages of peace? What caused disturbance, and kept the country in a state of agitation? What attempt was again ineffectual? What marriages took place in the royal family this year?

209. What brilliant naval exploit was accomplished at this time? How many prisoners were liberated? 210. What caused distress in the beginning of 1817. What was resorted to, in consequence of the riotous spirit manifested? How many suffered as traitors? What gold coinage was issued? 211. What event plunged the nation into the deepest sorrow? What became general throughout the kingdom? What did Spain receive for consenting to the abolition of the slave-trade? What sum was appropriated for the erection of churches in England? How much for the same purpose in Scotland? What marriages again took place in the royal family? 212. Who was entrusted with the care of the king, on the death of queen Charlotte? What must be acknowledged to her honour?

213. How did the country continue to be disturbed? Where did the most serious of these meetings take place? For what was Sir Francis Burdett imprisoned and fined? Where else were similar meetings held? What led to discussions in parliament? 214. What royal personages died in January 1820? How did George III. deserve to be called the father of his people? What rendered him an ornament and example to the nation? What could never be called in question?

GEORGE IV.

215. How was the accession of George IV. merely nominal? What intention did he express at the opening of parliament? Who was the ringleader in a conspiracy to assassinate the ministry? In what part of Scotland did a spirit of discontent chiefly prevail? Where did they take up arms? How many suffered on account of this rising? 216. What made the return of queen Caroline an imprudent step? Who were her partisans? What occurred at her funeral procession? 217. How was the king received on his visit to Ireland? What other part of his dominions did he visit the same year?

218. What led to insurrection in Ireland? How was the most formidable part of the disorders repressed? What proposal was made to relieve agricultural distress? 219. With what were the inhabitants of Scotland gratified in 1822? 220. Who succeeded lords Londonderry and Sidmouth? What treaty was signed by the Congress held at Vienna? What proposals were made by Britain? How did France resist these proposals? 221. What did Britain enjoy at this time? From what were great advantages anticipated? What was accounted one of the grievances in Ireland? 222. What led to insurrections among the negroes? Where were the consequences most disastrous? What measures were adopted for the benefit of the slaves? On what accusation was Mr Smith tried and condemned? What was the result of the Burmese war?

223. How was agitation still kept up in France? Who succeeded to the throne on the death of Louis? Whose efforts for emancipation had excited general interest? Of what did they in a short time get possession? Who furnished them with loans? What was pre-

judicial to their cause? Who attempted the recovery of the Morea? Who interfered in the cause of the Greeks? Where was the Turkish fleet attacked? 224. What induced a ruinous spirit of speculation in Britain? What was the consequence of the ridiculous expectations of profit from the South American mines? What reduced many from affluence to poverty? What brought distress on the labouring classes?

225. What called for the interference of Britain in 1825? What produced the separation of Brazil from Portugal? Why did Don Pedro resign the crown of Portugal to his daughter? Who opposed this arrangement? What court continued to give secret assistance to the rebels? What was the treacherous conduct of Don Miguel? Where was Donna Maria conducted by her attendants? 226. What bill was introduced by Mr Peel in 1826? What evils were produced by the repeal of the combination-laws? 227. Whose death revived the hopes of the friends of Catholic Emancipation? What encreased and strengthened their influence? What changes took place in the ministry? When did Mr Peel and other members of the Liverpool ministry return to office? What followed the repeal of the Test and Corporation acts? What measure was rejected for the last time by the house of Lords? To what were the ignorant excited by the violence of party-spirit? What seemed inevitable? What induced the duke of Wellington to countenance the measure he had hitherto opposed? To what were Roman Catholics admitted by this act? Has the tranquillity of Ireland been ensured by this measure?

228. Who succeeded Pope Leo XII.? When was war declared between Russia, and Turkey? Was the offer of the sovereignty of Greece accepted by Leopold? 229. What diminished the popularity of George IV.? How long did he reign?

WILLIAM IV.

230. How was the accession of William regarded by the nation? Who succeeded the duke of Wellington as Premier? How long did he continue in that office? What occasioned great loss of property during this year? What proclamation was issued by the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland? 231. What caused commotions in Paris, July 1830? What office was the duke of Orleans requested to accept? In whose favour did Charles abdicate the crown? Where did he go on leaving France? 232. Where was a revolution commenced in August? What city sustained great damage in the contest? What compelled the grand duke Constantine to abandon Warsaw? What decree was issued by the emperor of Russia? How long did the Poles struggle for liberty? 233. When did Leopold make his entrance into Brussels? From which of the Allied Powers did he receive assistance?

234. Who introduced the Reform-bill? What was occasioned by *its being thrown out* in the house of Lords? For what was a day

neral fasting observed in this country? 235. On what occasion a serious riot take place at Bristol? How many perished in sequence? What bill passed the French Chamber of Peers?

In what were the ministry again defeated? What was celebrated with public rejoicings? On what grounds was the Irish Church Reform-bill opposed? How long had Captain Ross been out on the Arctic expedition? What sum was voted to the tery in compensation for the abolition of slavery? 237. Whose intment as Premier produced great excitement? Who returned office on Sir Robert Peel's resignation?

8. What had caused civil war in Portugal? What event placed it in the same situation? With what view was a treaty concluded with these countries by England and France? How were its rights raised in England for the service of the queen of Spain? What was the result of the abolition of slavery in the West Indies? Were the houses of parliament destroyed by fire? 239. What motions were made to the Church-commissioners for Scotland? Was it proposed to employ the surplus revenues of the Irish Church? What grant was made on the proposal being resisted? What bill was brought in regarding the Church of England? How did Sir Andrew Agnew's bills lost?

9. By whom was an address presented to the king respecting the regent's lodges? What was announced by the duke of Cumberland to his majesty assenting to the address? On what occasion was an appointment made on the life of Louis Philippe? 241. What proposal made by government with regard to the London University? How did the king show his concern for the interests of the people in his last illness? What was the conduct of the queen towards her royal consort? What praise was granted to William IV. by those differing from him in politics? How did he return the affection of the nation? Who succeeded him?

END OF THE QUESTIONS.

E R R A T A.

*Page 109. For FROM THE UNION, read
FROM THE UNION OF THE CROWNS.*

Page 116, l. 5,	<i>for</i>	Palatine,	<i>read</i>	Palatinate.
118, l. 1,	—	religion,	—	religious.
126, l. 30.	—	consider,	—	encounter.
181, l. 14,	—	1731,	—	1713.
199, l. 5,	—	secure,	—	seem.
213, l. 37,	—	were,	—	were confined.

SCHOOL BOOKS


BY

WILLIAM ANGUS, A.M.

TO BE HAD, IN EDINBURGH, OF OLIVER & BOYD,
AND STIRLING, KENNEY, & CO.,

1. AN ENGLISH SPELLING AND PRONOUNCING VOCABULARY, on a new Plan, with Lessons in Reading, Outlines of Geography, Astronomy, History, &c. Price 2s.

DITTO, WITH OUTLINES of Geography, Astronomy, History, &c. Price 2s. 6d.

 THE OUTLINES may be had separately.— Price 9d.

2. AN INTRODUCTION TO THE VOCABULARY AND JUVENILE PIECES. New Edition, Price 1s.
3. ENGLISH GRAMMAR: with Exercises, and Questions for Examination; an Extensive Collection of VULGAR ANGLICISMS, SCOTTICISMS, IRICISMS, &c. with a Key. Fourth Edition, Improved and Enlarged.—Price 4s.
4. A SUPPLEMENT TO DITTO. Second Edition. Price 3s.
5. AN ABRIDGEMENT OF DITTO. Fifth Edition, Price 1s 3d.
6. HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF CHRIST, Harmonised from CAMPBELL's Translation of the Gospels, with Short Explanatory Notes. Third Edition.— Price 2s. — With THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES, 2s. 6d.
7. HYMNS AND SACRED MAXIMS, with an Abridgement of the Economy of Human Life, — the Elements of Reading, — and Exercises in Spelling. Fourth Edition.—Price 1s. 6d.

SCHOOL BOOKS.

8. JUVENILE PIECES IN PROSE AND VERSE; with Lessons for Spelling, &c. &c. Also an APPENDIX, containing the History of Joseph, Esther, &c. 7th Edition.—Price 2s.
 9. A SELECTION OF POETICAL AND DRAMATIC PIECES, from various Authors. Third Edition.—Price 2s.
 10. FAMILIAR QUESTIONS, for the Instruction and Amusement of Young Persons. Fourth Edition.—Price 1s.
 11. A NEW AND IMPROVED CATECHISM OF USEFUL KNOWLEDGE.—Second Edition.—Price 6d.
 12. MENTAL CALCULATION explained and illustrated by DIAGRAMS and TABLES, Price 1s.
 13. AN ENLARGED PRIMER, With Easy Reading, Price 1s.
-

The following are edited by WILLIAM ANGUS, A. M.

1. THE ASSEMBLY'S CATECHISM SIMPLIFIED; With NOTES, chiefly from Dr WATTS.—Price 3d.
2. WATTS' FIRST CATECHISM Enlarged, with the SECOND Abridged.—Price 3d.
3. A SHORT VIEW OF THE HUMAN FACULTIES AND PASSIONS, with Remarks and Directions respecting their Nature, Improvement, and Government.—Price 1s. 6d.
4. HISTORY OF ENGLAND, from the Roman Invasion to the Accession of Queen Victoria I. With Questions for Examination.—Price 3s.

GLASGOW:
W. G. BLACKIE & CO., PRINTERS,
VILLAFIELD.









